

CROSS-CULTURAL  
VERNACULAR  
LANDSCAPES  
OF  
SOUTHERN  
ARIZONA

A FIELD GUIDE FOR THE  
VERNACULAR ARCHITECTURE FORUM  
25TH ANNIVERSARY CONFERENCE

*Vaf*  
vernacular architecture forum  
tucson 2005



[www.vernaculararchitectureforum.org](http://www.vernaculararchitectureforum.org)

Cover photo courtesy of Bill Timmerman

---

# Cross-Cultural Vernacular Landscapes of Southern Arizona

A Field Guide for the  
Vernacular Architecture Forum  
25th Anniversary Conference  
Tucson Arizona  
2005



Edited by:  
Laura H. Hollengreen  
R. Brooks Jeffery

Conference Sponsors:  
Preservation Studies, College of Architecture and Landscape Architecture, The  
University of Arizona  
The Southwest Center, The University of Arizona

Additional funding for this publication has been provided by:  
The Robidoux Foundation  
The Southwestern Foundation for Education and Historical Preservation

Copyright © 2005 by the Vernacular Architecture Forum. All rights reserved.  
Essays, articles, and illustrations appearing in this publication may not be reproduced,  
in any form, except for classroom and non-commercial use, without permission from the  
Vernacular Architecture Forum, [www.vernaculararchitectureforum.org](http://www.vernaculararchitectureforum.org).

---

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

Acknowledgments	iv
Table of Maps	vii
Foreword (Laura H. Hollengreen)	1
Introduction (R. Brooks Jeffery)	3
Chronology	5
I. Vernacular Landscapes in Context	12
1. Matthew Sterner	15
<i>Native American Architecture of Southern Arizona</i>	
2. John Messina	27
<i>Architecture and Urbanism of the Pimería Alta during the Periods of Spanish Colonization and Mexican Independence, 1692-1854</i>	
3. Anne M. Nequette	43
<i>Architecture of the Territorial Period in Southern Arizona, 1848-1912</i>	
4. Josephine Antoinette Hilliard and Matthew Sterner	55
<i>Cattle Ranching and Ranch Architecture in Southern Arizona</i>	
5. James E. Ayres and Janet H. Parkhurst	71
<i>Mining and Mining Towns in Southern Arizona</i>	
6. R. Brooks Jeffery	87
<i>20th-Century Residential Landscapes</i>	
7. Melissa J. Huber and Michael Lovato	95
<i>Traditional Typologies — New Applications</i>	

---

<b>II. Tour Site Descriptions</b>	104
<b>Thursday Tours</b>	
Southern Arizona	
8. San Xavier del Bac (John Messina)	109
9. Canoa Ranch (Josephine Antoinette Hilliard)	117
10. Tumacácori (John Messina)	127
11. Patagonia (R. Brooks Jeffery)	133
12. Empire Ranch (Simon Herbert)	141
<b>Friday Tours</b>	
13. Mining Towns (Janet Parkhurst and Harris Sobin with the assistance of R. Brooks Jeffery)	149
14. Downtown Tucson Historic Districts	173
El Presidio (University of Arizona students coordinated by Andrew Gorski)	173
Barrio Viejo (University of Arizona students coordinated by Andrew Gorski)	202
15. Tumamoc Hill and University Indian Ruin (Paul Fish)	219
16. 20th-Century Residential Landscapes (R. Brooks Jeffery)	229
<b>Sidebars (R.D. Phares)</b>	
Tequila	124
Desert Flora	202
Music	224
Glossary of Terms	246
Selected Bibliography (compiled with the assistance of Tania Messina)	248
Notes on Contributors	250
Index	254

---

---

# ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

A collaborative enterprise such as the compilation of this volume and the organization of the conference for which it was produced entails the challenge of coordinating the contributions of many people and institutions but also, at the end, the very real pleasure of thanking all those who put their resources, expertise, and time to work for the common cause.

Thanks must go first to the conference organizing committee in Tucson, Arizona, led by R. Brooks Jeffery as Conference Coordinator, John Messina as Conference Vice-Coordinator, Cynthia Lindquist, Conference Planner, Lupita Cruz, Conference Business Manager, and Laura H. Hollengreen, Field Guide Editor. The following members of the committee have also devoted countless hours and unfailing support to the effort; without them, the conference would not have taken place and the Field Guide would not have been published. They are James E. Ayres, Mark Barmann, Susan Bartlett, Catherine Gilman, Andrew Gorski, Simon Herbert, Josephine Antoinette Hilliard, Melissa J. Huber, Michael Lovato, Bill Mackey, Anne M. Nequette, Janet Parkhurst, Matthew Sterner, James Turner, and Stephen Vollmer.

Next, the conference organizing committee wishes to thank the following private property owners for graciously allowing access to their homes for purposes of documentation and again as destinations on the VAF tours: Rocky and Wendy Brittain, Burns and Wald-Hopkins Architects, Chris Carroll and Susan Aiken, John Crow, David and Billie Hardy, Rick Joy, Tom Peterson, Abigail Roanhorse, Ilya Sloan, Tony and Mary-Helen Valdez, Joe and Peggy Wilder, and Emily Wilson. In preparing for the tour of the Downtown Tucson Historic Districts, several University of Arizona students participated in the field work necessary to produce the associated floor plans published in this volume: Julia Arriola, Jessi Faust, Ariel Fisher, Katie Gannon, Lisa Gavioli, Geoffrey Gay, Katrina Ledy, Joy Lyndes, and Davita Mueller.

The following organizations and institutions, and the contact persons named, have made it possible to mount the conference by providing support in any number of ways: Arizona Historical Society, Southern Arizona Division—Deborah Shelton, Acting Director; Arizona State Museum—

---

Paul Fish, Curator of Archaeology; Barrio Viejo Association—Eddie Flores; Bureau of Land Management—Max Witkind and Shela McFarlin, Field Area Manager; City of Tucson Historic Preservation Office—J.T. Fey and Marty McCune; Desert Archaeology Inc.—Homer Thiel, Research Archaeologist and William Doelle, President; Design W, LLC—Arturo Vazquez; Empire Ranch Foundation—Bruce Lehman, Board Member; Franciscan Fathers of San Xavier; Patagonia Public Library—Jeffrey Cooper, Librarian; Patagonia Women’s Club/Cady Hall—Maureen O’Brien, President; Patronato San Xavier—Bunny Fontana, President; Pima County—Robie Pardee, Canoa Ranch Manager, and Linda Mayro, Cultural Resources Manager; El Presidio Historic District Advisory Board—Ilya Sloan; Ryden Architects—Don Ryden; Saint Philip’s in the Hills Episcopal Church—John Kitagawa, Rector; Southwest Center, The University of Arizona—Joe Wilder, Director; Statistical Research Inc.—Jeffery Altschul, President; Tucson Museum of Art—Laurie Rufe, Director; Tumacácori National Historic Park—David Yubeta and Ann Rasor, Superintendent; Vint and Associates, Architects—Bob Vint; Winterhaven Neighborhood Association—Ray Brice; and Preservation Studies Program, College of Architecture and Landscape Architecture, The University of Arizona—R. Brooks Jeffery, Coordinator and Interim Associate Dean.

Last but certainly not least, the committee acknowledges with gratitude the funding support that has been provided by several organizations and institutions: the College of Architecture and Landscape Architecture, The University of Arizona, for conference planning; the Robidoux Foundation, for design and publication of the VAF Field Guide; the Southwest Center, The University of Arizona, for conference planning; the Southwestern Foundation for Education and Historical Preservation, for purchase of reproductions of historic photographs and for production of the maps in the Field Guide; and the Vernacular Architecture Forum for start-up conference planning.

---

*“The Sonoran Desert lies mostly below 5,000 feet at its eastern edge, sloping to sea level near the Colorado River, crossing it into southern California, extending southward into both mainland Mexico and Baja California. It is the only North American desert with sizable “subtrees” and treelike cacti, along with numerous deciduous and evergreen shrubs, and a marvelous variety of succulents. This particular assemblage of desert plants has been in place only about four thousand years. An Egyptian ecologist, seeing the Sonoran Desert for the first time, exclaimed that this was not a desert at all but a veritable flower garden.”*

*Ann Zwinger, The Mysterious Lands*

---

# TABLE OF MAPS

Southeastern Arizona Overview	10
Southeastern Arizona Tour Map	106
Tucson	
San Xavier	
Tumacacori	
Nogales	
Patagonia	
Empire Ranch	
Tombstone	
Bisbee/Warren	
Tucson Key Map	107
Marriott Hotel	
El Presidio	
Barrio Viejo	
Hope VI/Santa Rosa	
El Encanto	
Colonia Solana	
Binghampton	
Catalina Foothills Estates	
Winterhaven	
Tumamoc Hill	
University Indian Ruins	
Patagonia Walking Tour	132
Bisbee Walking Tour	166
El Presidio Walking Tour	172
Barrio Viejo Walking Tour	202

---

---

# FOREWORD

Laura H. Hollengreen

The purpose of this foreword is to provide some general information about the conventions adopted in the following text. It must first be noted that the text is divided into two distinct, albeit related, parts: a first section of essays meant to provide necessary historical and contextual information for the understanding of vernacular landscapes in southern Arizona and a second section of essays supplying detailed descriptions of the sites to be visited on the various tours organized for the Vernacular Architecture Forum conference. The first section is organized largely according to chronology and the differentiation of building types within specific vernacular cultures. For the second section, we have chosen to indicate the days on which the tours are scheduled in the Table of Contents, for ease of reference on the part of tour participants, but have also endeavored to group the sites geographically, for ease of use by other potential readers in the future. The maps, which have all been commissioned especially for this volume and are printed on a different, heavier stock than the rest of the guide so that they may be found quickly when needed, will doubtless serve as an important means for correlating sites across the region and for understanding their evolution in relation to natural and man-made environments.

Where there are multiple authors who have contributed equally to a given text, their names have been given in democratic, alphabetical order on the Table of Contents and on the first page of the essay; if their contributions are unequal, the names have been given in order according to the weight of the contribution or it is otherwise indicated that one author is subordinate. If differently authored parts of an essay are sufficiently distinct to warrant it, the authors' names have also been given at the head of the specific sections authored.

Most of the contextual essays and some of the site descriptions include footnote references to major sources for the topic in question and the reader is urged also to consult the selected bibliography at the end of the volume for further works on topics of interest. Where relevant, cross-references to other parts of the volume have been included, so that the reader might easily find other texts which provide fuller coverage of a certain topic. The volume also includes a general chronology, following the introductory essay, and a short glossary of those architectural or historical terms used in the volume that may not be familiar to the reader.

---

*The life of the desert lives only by virtue  
of adapting itself to the conditions of  
the desert ... those things that can live  
in the desert become stamped after a  
time with a peculiar desert character.  
The struggle seems to develop in them  
special characteristics ... more positive,  
more insistent ...<sup>1</sup>*

---

# INTRODUCTION

R. Brooks Jeffery

To understand the vernacular landscapes of Southern Arizona, it is first necessary to define a context by which the singular building elements, forms, districts, and landscapes can be viewed and interpreted. Fundamental to this process is the definition of the term “vernacular” as it applies to the built landscape. For the purposes of this essay, I wish to define vernacular in the broadest possible terms, following J.B. Jackson’s definition of landscape: as cultural expressions of, and defined by, the particular qualities of *place*.<sup>2</sup> Thus, I am applying the term “vernacular” in the linguistic sense to signify the unique language of a people or place as expressed in *all* the products of a culture, including transformed landscapes, architecture, folk arts, literature, music, food, etc.

## The Desert

To understand the core qualities of this place, it is necessary to understand the characteristics of the desert environment, and subsequently how cultures over time have defined their relationship to it. Geographically, Southern Arizona is situated in the vast Sonoran Desert which extends south into the Mexican states of Sonora and Sinaloa. The Sonoran Desert shares attributes with the other arid regions that, all told, comprise one-fifth of the earth’s surface and contain one-quarter of the world’s population: a) scarcity of water—Southern Arizona receives approximately 11” of rain annually; b) extreme climactic conditions—temperatures typically reach above 110 degrees Fahrenheit in the summer and dip below the freezing mark in the winter; and c) clear-sky conditions that, in addition to producing cloudless days, produce night-sky radiation,

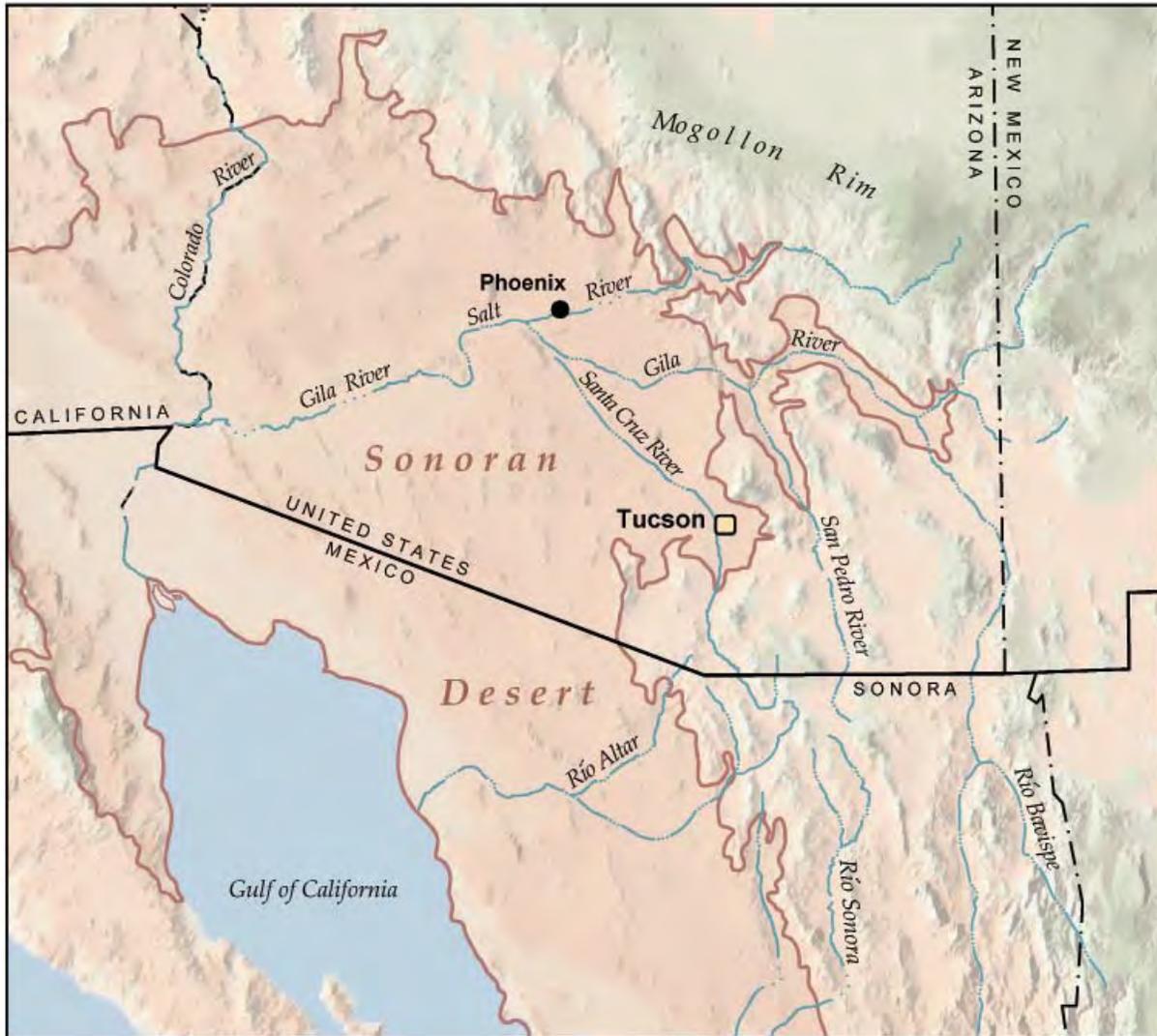


Fig. 0.1 – Map of Sonoran Desert showing basin and range topography. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology, Inc

resulting in vast temperature swings between day and night, averaging some 30-40 degrees in Southern Arizona. What is unique to the Sonoran Desert, however, is that it has two rainy seasons (in contrast to the typical one winter rainy season), each with its distinct characteristics. Winter rains (*equipata*), from December to February, are gentle cool rains and occasionally bring snow to the region. Summer rains (locally referred to as *monsoons*, although they feature different characteristics than their Indian Ocean namesake), from July through September, are

thunderstorms that occur almost daily and often produce torrential flooding in the otherwise dry desert rivers and arroyos.

The Sonoran Desert is also characterized morphologically as a series of broad, shallow bowls surrounded by extremely tall mountains, reaching as high as 9500 feet above sea level, a landscape typical of the basin and range geography of the American West (fig. 0.1). In Southern Arizona, the tall mountains are referred to as “sky islands,” as they contain unique flora and fauna

including evergreen forests and exotic birdlife. Accommodating this harsh desert environment involves an intrinsic understanding of its natural resources and rhythms. Historically, the diverse topography and natural resources of Southern Arizona made it an ideal place to balance seasonal farming in the desert valleys with hunting and gathering practices in the surrounding hills and mountains.

Tucson, like other toponyms, has its etymological roots in the landscape, reinforcing the inextricable link between landscape and the cultural expression of place. The word “Tucson” is derived from the O’odham (formerly called Papago) word *chuk shon*, meaning “at the base of the black mountain” later transliterated by the Spanish as “Túc-son.” The black mountain, Sentinel Peak and now called “A” Mountain, is a volcanic lava cone that intersects with the adjacent flood plain of the Santa Cruz River, creating a geological dike that pushes the underground stream channel above the ground surface.

The Tucson basin lies at 2400 feet above sea level and is defined by five mountain ranges (fig. 0.2). The most significant features that influenced human settlement in this arid landscape, however, are the rivers and watercourses that outline the basin as they collect water from mountain runoff. Of these, the perennial Santa Cruz River was also the corridor by which the transportation of people, goods, cultures, and technologies was conducted for millennia, until the end of the 19th century.

Generally speaking, the distinct cultural expressions of Southern Arizona history can be divided into four periods: Prehistoric (2500 BCE - 1450 CE), Spanish/Mexican (1694 – 1853), and the American (1853 – current). Anthropologist and historian Tom Sheridan has observed that as humans settled in Southern Arizona, their relationship to this place evolved over time from one of accommodation and acculturation to one of

## GENERAL CHRONOLOGY

### 2500 BCE - 1450 . CE Prehistoric period

1000 BCE	800 CE	Late Archaic/Cochise period
	1-800 CE	Early Formative/Pioneer period
	800-1150 CE	Middle Formative/Hohokam period
	1150-1450 CE	Late Formative/Classic Hohokam period

### 1594-1853 . Spanish/Mexican period

	1573	Laws of the Indies promulgated by King Philip II of Spain in order to regulate the foundation and construction of towns in the New World
	1687	Father Eusebia Francisco Kino entered the Pimera Alta
	1691	Father Kino first visited site of S. Cayetano, where he will establish the mission church of S. Jos de Tumacaccori
	1692	Father Kino first visited site of S. Xavier del Bac
	1700	Mission church of S. Xavier begun by this date
	1751	Pima Revolt
	1767	Jesuits expelled from New Spain and replaced by Franciscans
	1771	Convento of S. Augustn del Tucson completed by this date
	1775	Tucson presidio established
	1802-1820s	Present church of S. Jos de Tumaccori constructed
	1802-1820s	Present church of S. Jos de Tumaccori constructed
	1821	Mexico achieved independence from Spain
	1827	Mexican decree stipulating expulsion of most Spanish-born citizens

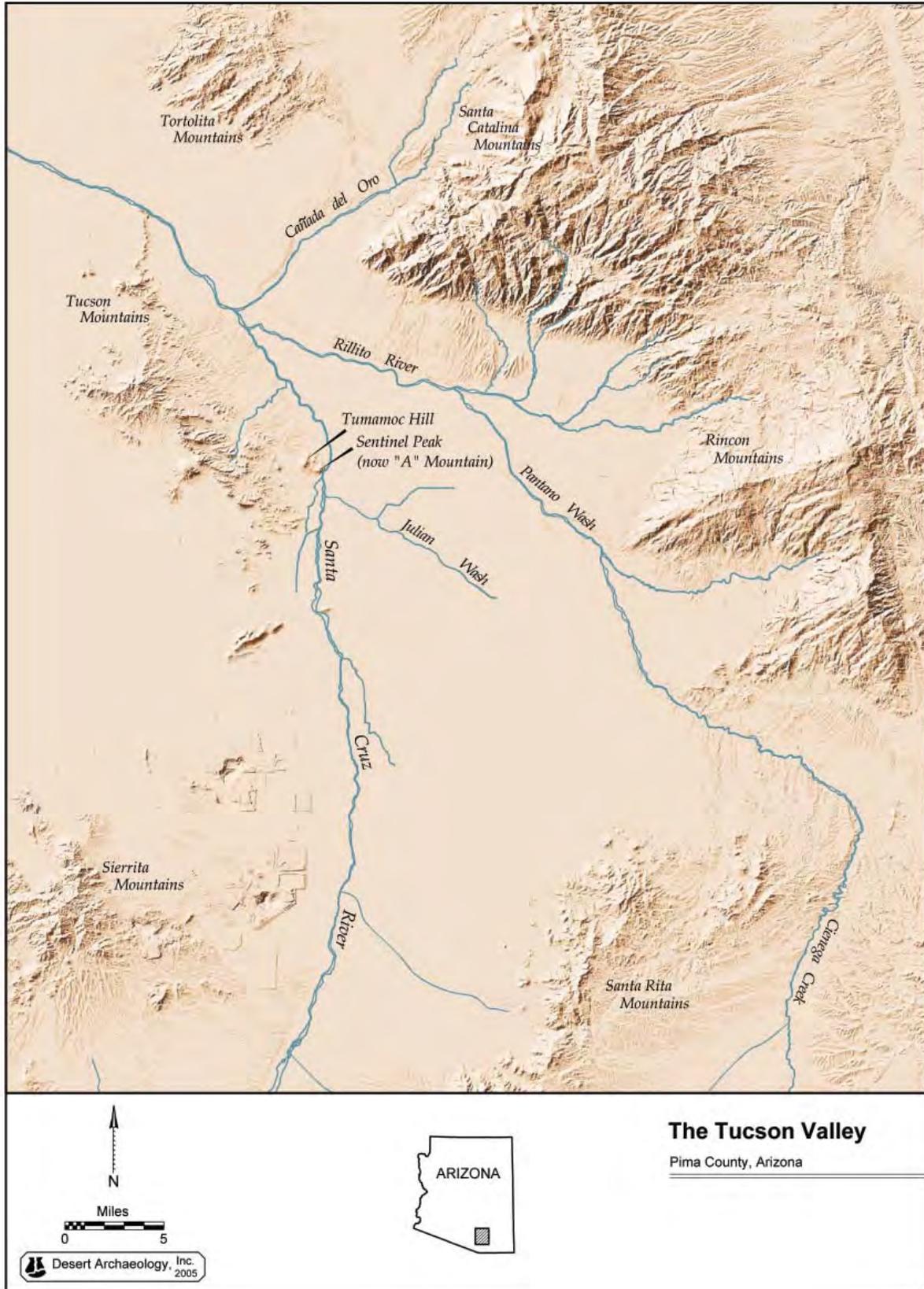


Fig. 0.2 – Map of Tucson valley showing geographic features. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology, Inc.

extraction and exploitation.<sup>5</sup> The built landscape of Southern Arizona, therefore, is a tell, with each period creating a layer of material culture representing different relationships to the land, the imposition of cultural identity, and a hybrid, cross-cultural expression unique to this place.

## Prehistoric Period

During the early prehistoric period, permanent settlements along the region's rivers and watercourses were prompted by the introduction of corn from Mesoamerican cultures beginning in ca. 2500 BCE. In addition to floodwater farming, these early settlements relied on water control technologies, also introduced from Mesoamerica, to exploit the available resources within the extreme conditions of Southern Arizona's desert environment, thus making possible a sustainable domestic culture. Over time, Southern Arizona was a melting pot for the importation of diverse architectural traditions, building types, and construction systems, as Mesoamerican and Southwestern cultures migrated and converged. The dominant cultural group in Southern Arizona during the prehistoric period was the Hohokam (AD 800-1450). The Hohokam absorbed other cultural groups and created an elaborate built environment. Hohokam culture had been abandoned by the time Spanish explorers and missionaries arrived in Southern Arizona but the surviving cultural descendents of the Hohokam, the Pima and Papago (now Tohono O'odham), peoples, continued to maintain agrarian settlements along the Santa Cruz River which incorporated some of the same architectural traditions.

## Spanish/Mexican Period

Spanish exploration of northern New Spain and what is now the American Southwest began in the 16th century during which early explorers recorded encounters with Pima and Papago (now

## GENERAL CHRONOLOGY

1848 Guadalupe-Hidalgo treaty signed by Mexico and the U.S. Gold discovered in California, spurring the gold rush of the following year

### 1853-present • American period

1854 Gadsden Purchase treaty by which the U.S. purchased territory from Mexico, including that of southern Arizona Arizona

Arizona Mining and Trading Company founded

1856 Mexican troops vacated the Tucson presidio by this date.

Sonora Exploring and Mining Company founded

1857 Mail and stage lines established through southern Arizona

San Xavier Mining Company founded

1858 Permanent settlement of American merchants in Tucson

1861-1865 U.S. Civil War

1862 Homestead Act passed by the U.S. Congress

1864 Cerro Colorado Mining District created, the first of its kind in southern Arizona

1866 First federal law relating to mining passed

1871 City of Tucson incorporated

1872 Federal Mining Act passed

1873 Territory of Arizona organized

1877 Desert Lands Act passed by the U.S. Congress

1877-80 First railroad line across Arizona constructed

1880-81 Telephone service established in Tucson

Tohono O'odham) tribes in settlements along river floodplains. This region, populated primarily by Pima-speaking populations, became known as the Pimería Alta (fig. 2.1), a large geographic area defined by the Pima and Papago settlements that occupied the current Mexican state of Sonora and the region of Southern Arizona. The Spanish were responsible for importing into the area new building types, construction technologies, socio-economic institutions, and cultural traditions that are still prevalent today. The Spanish Colonial period in Pimería Alta ended with Mexican independence from Spain in 1821 but its architectonic influences in the region lingered on through the period of Mexican period of control, which ended in 1853 when the United States government purchased the land currently defined as Southern Arizona. Between 1821 and 1853, however, this area was part of the Mexican state of Sonora and although the Spanish and Mexican building typologies had their origins far from the Pimería Alta, they are often referred to as "Sonoran".

## American Period

Americans began arriving in what is now Southern Arizona in the 1840s, tempted by the California gold rush and the perceived opportunity for a new life in the American West. The Homestead Act of 1862 encouraged the American population to spread into the unsettled West, allowing even those with little money to lay claim to land and, in the process, "Americanizing" the territory. Hundreds of people filed claims and pursued livelihoods ranging from ranching and mining to real estate speculation and building construction. Although all of these enterprises contributed to the transformation of the American West, it was mining that symbolized most dramatically the growing American perception of the western landscape as a disposable commodity.

As a minority group, the first generation of American settlers adopted local traditions and assimilated into the local culture. Over the course of the next few decades, however, American settlers slowly transformed Southern Arizona's cultural identity through the use of tangible cultural expressions of their diverse places of origin. When the transcontinental railroad was extended through Southern Arizona in 1880, it brought both culture in the form of eastern tastes in everything from food and music to architecture and technology and the availability of mass-produced materials, enabling the rapid transformation of Tucson from a Sonoran pueblo to an American town.

In the first half of the 20th century, Tucson saw the rise of land speculation and development, home and car ownership, and the separation of work from home in separate parts of town. Soon, Americans were living in subdivisions that distinguished themselves from areas of Mexican habitation, producing an increasingly segregated town, both ethnically and architecturally. During this period, Tucson, and the Southwest in general, was a destination for tourists seeking to discover the exotic landscape and culture that they had previously only read about. Tourism operators, such as the Harvey Hotel Company, used the region's unfamiliar architecture as a vehicle to promote a romanticized image of the Southwest.

Just as the eastern states of the U.S. had promoted selected historical references beginning in the 19th century with the adoption of English colonial revival styles, promoters and architects in the West extracted architectural characteristics from previous cultures to produce romanticized Spanish Colonial revival styles for the region. None of these styles represented an architectural vocabulary indigenous to the authentic historical building traditions of Tucson and Southern Arizona; instead, they offered a manufactured image which sought to lure new residents and

cater to recent arrivals by associating new architecture with a generalized southwestern heritage. Even after World War II and lasting until today, regional revival styles dominate the residential suburban landscape, feeding the expectations of newcomers in a region where growth is considered an industry.

Today, however, Tucson's superficial, image-driven "southwestern" cultural identity is slowly being replaced by one that is more responsive to the natural desert environment and more inclusive of the genuine cultural traditions of our past. Essential principles of Southern Arizona's vernacular built environment are now being applied to contemporary forms, materials, and lifestyles, creating a new "vernacular" expression. Moreover, southern Arizona's vernacular landscapes are gradually coming under the protection of a myriad of public landowners, including federal, state, county and tribal agencies, which has caused a transformation of the landscape from one defined by geographic boundaries to one defined by administrative boundaries (fig. 0.3). These public land stewards often have dissimilar missions but are realizing the fundamental need for the preservation of this region's vernacular built environment, so that current and future generations may continue to find inspiration.

## Conclusion

The evolution of Southern Arizona's vernacular landscapes presents a set of cultural fingerprints, each with its own characteristics, but when combined forming a *place* unlike any other. Architect Charles Moore wrote that "to make a place is to make a domain that helps people know where they are, and by extension, who they are."<sup>4</sup> In a parallel phenomenon, cities like Tucson have undergone many attempts to reinvent themselves in order to meet the demands of tourists, newcomers, and economic development. Not unlike the ethic of extraction and exploitation of the

## GENERAL CHRONOLOGY

1881	Copper Queen Mining Company incorporated
	Town of Tombstone incorporated and made the seat of Cochise County
	Shoot-out at the OK Corral in Tombstone
1882	Gas, electricity, and water lines established in Tucson by this date
1885	University of Arizona, to be located in Tucson, established by the Arizona territorial legislature
1886	Apache leader Geronimo surrendered
1887	School of Mines (now Old Main), the first University of Arizona building, constructed
	Severe earthquake hit Tucson
1888	Arizona and South Eastern Railroad Company incorporated
1899	Automobile introduced to Tucson
1901	Calumet and Arizona Mining Company founded
	Tombstone Consolidated Mine Company founded
1902	Town of Bisbee incorporated
1912	Arizona achieved statehood
1916	Tucson, Cornelia, and Gila Bend Railroad line from Gila Bend to the mines completed
1927	Largest ever mass of copper discovered in Bisbee



natural landscape by early settlers in the West, the region's cultural identity has been constructed and marketed as a commodity of superficial icons to be packaged into themed experiences catering to consumers external to this place. Such a diminution of Tucson's authenticity as a rich and diverse tell of architectural expressions, also belies the rich diversity of people who have been "stamped ... with a peculiar desert character" and who continue not only to explore the traditional vernacular landscapes of Southern Arizona but also to interpret and apply them in new ways that are appropriate for this time and this place.

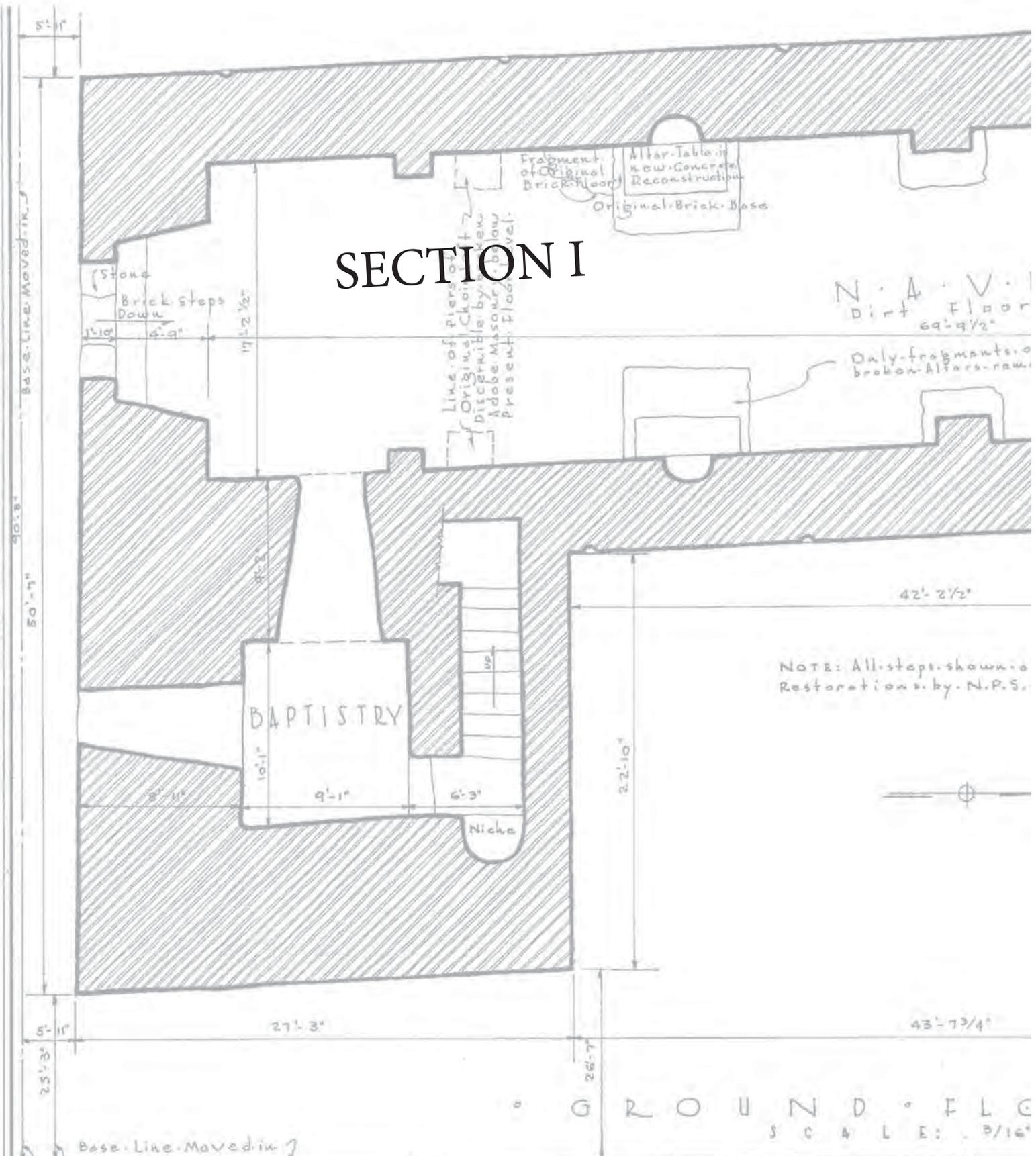
ENDNOTES

1. John C. van Dyke, *The Desert: Further Studies in Natural Appearances* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1999), 50.
2. J. B. Jackson, *The Necessity for Ruins and Other Topics* (Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press, 1980), p. 113.
3. Thomas Sheridan, *Arizona: A History* (Tucson: The University of Arizona Press, 1995).
4. Kent Bloomer and Charles Moore, *Body, Memory and Architecture* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1977), p. 31.

*"A Sonoran Desert village may receive five inches of rain one year and fifteen the next. A single storm may dump an inch and a half in the matter of an hour on one field and entirely skip another a few miles away. Dry spells lasting four months may be broken by a single torrential cloudburst, then resume again for several more months. Unseasonal storms, and droughts during the customary rainy seasons, are frequent enough to reduce patterns to chaos."*

Gary Nabhan, *The Desert Smells Like Rain*

# SECTION I



C. Maguire, E. F. Eastman, Mens.  
F. Eastman, E. F. Nichols, Dels.

U.S. DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR  
OFFICE OF NATIONAL PARKS, BUILDINGS, AND RESERVATIONS  
BRANCH OF PLANS AND DESIGN

MISSION • SAN • JOSE  
NEAR • SANTA • CRUZ • RIVER  
NAME OF STRUCTURE  
SANTA

# VERNACULAR LANDSCAPES IN CONTEXT

V. E.  
: floor  
9 1/2"

walls of  
- remain

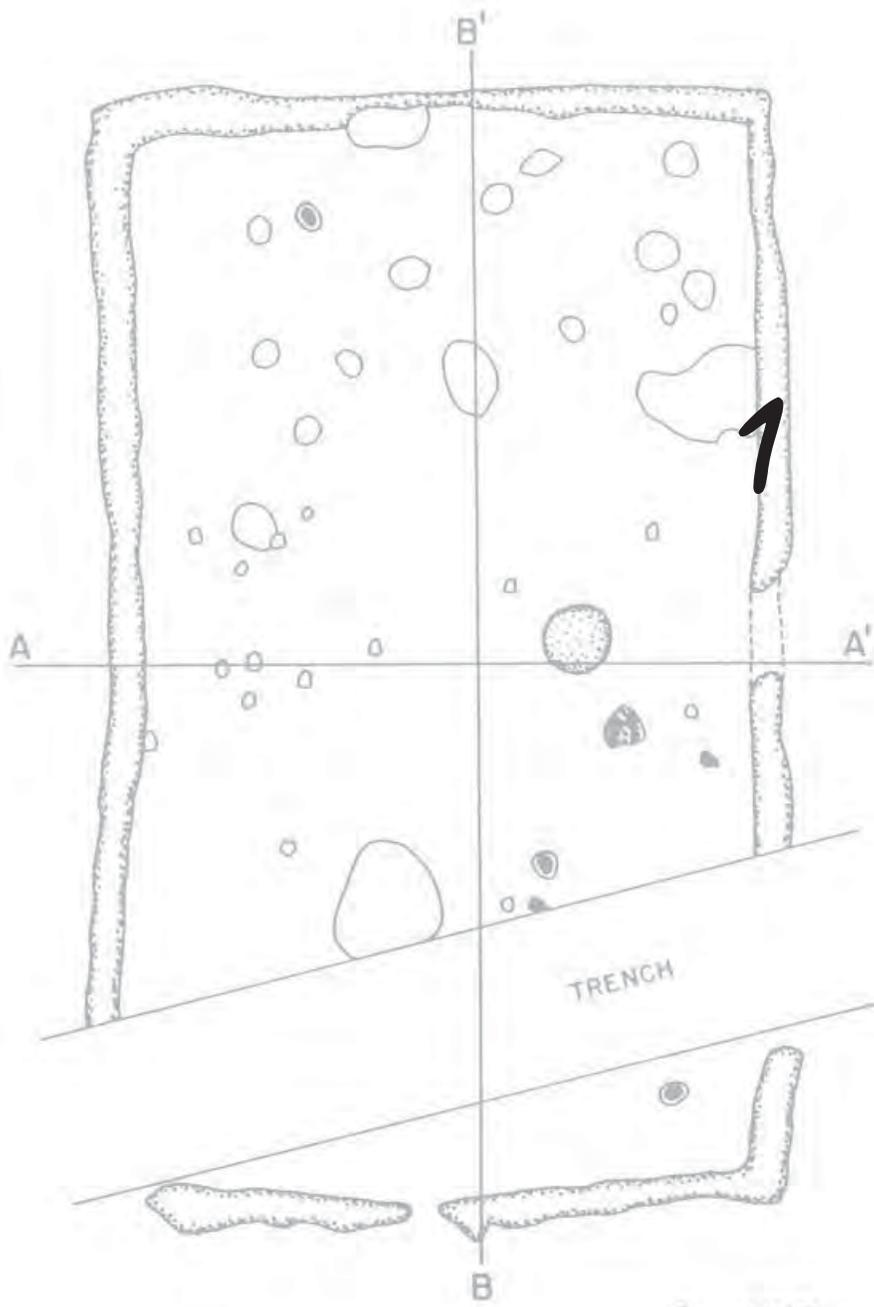
downward -  
- N.P.S. - 1921.



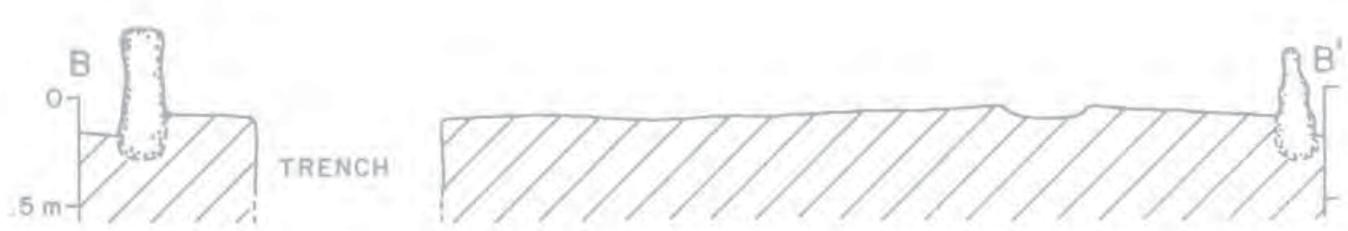
3/4"

FLOOR PLAN  
3/16" = 1'-0"





- Posthole
- Pit
- ⊙ Hearth
- ▭ Adobe
- ▲ Chipped Stone
- ◊ Sherd
- ⊙ Ash Pit



---

# NATIVE AMERICAN ARCHITECTURE OF SOUTHERN ARIZONA

Matthew Sterner

Southern Arizona has evidence of some of the oldest inhabitants on the North American continent. Evidence for occupation prior to 11,000 years before the present is extensive in the San Pedro Valley, located in the southeastern corner of the state (fig 0.1). The San Pedro Valley has yielded the single largest concentration of Clovis sites in North America.<sup>1</sup> These earliest inhabitants of southern Arizona almost certainly practiced a nomadic lifestyle, subsisting completely on what they could kill, capture, or collect. Eight Clovis and probable Clovis sites are known from the upper San Pedro Valley. At the sites of Naco, Lehner, Murray Springs, Liekem, and Escapule, evidence of the early hunters has been found in association with the remains of Columbian mammoths and other extinct mega-fauna.<sup>2</sup> Other sites have generated evidence of additional mammoth or bison kills.

Evidence of Paleoindian remains in the Tucson Basin, however, is sparse. A Clovis presence has been documented only by isolated surface finds, including a projectile point with mixed Clovis and Folsom fluting from the Rattlesnake Pass area of the Tucson Mountains and a Clovis projectile point from a Hohokam site in the Avra Valley.

Whether they represent an adaptation from the Paleoindian period or the introduction of a new population or technology, the inhabitants of southern Arizona to follow the Paleoindian people are generally referred to as the Archaic (this is also sometimes referred to as the Cochise culture). The Archaic period was significant in that it provided an intermediate step between the hunting cultures of the

preceding Paleoindian period and the succeeding agricultural and pottery producing cultures of the Southwest. Mixed hunting and collecting of wild plant foods is the unquestioned subsistence pattern of Cochise peoples, although the relative importance of animal and plant foods in the economy remains poorly understood.

The development of houses and associated storage facilities in the late Archaic period suggests a greater degree of stability than in preceding times. Although structures have been recorded at Middle Archaic sites, Late Archaic pit houses are more formally constructed and occur with greater frequency. Late Archaic houses are generally small, roughly oval in shape, and measure 3 by 2.75 m. in size, with a single interior hearth and one or more bell-shaped storage pits (fig. 1.1). Often, these houses have no visible point

of entry. Interior postholes suggest that a dome-shaped construction of arched poles formed the roof. Archaic pit houses are typically small compared to later ceramic-period structures. The development of Late Archaic facilities should not be interpreted as indicating the end of seasonal movements to exploit varied resources. Ethnographic data suggests that below-ground storage facilities such as the large, bell-shaped storage pits of the San Pedro Cochise culture coincide directly with the need to hide stored resources when the storage location was periodically abandoned.<sup>5</sup> That such storage pits occur at archaeological sites lacking houses reinforces this notion.<sup>4</sup> The available evidence suggests that late Archaic houses occur at locations close to the San Pedro River or to impermanent water channels, rather than at mountain locations.

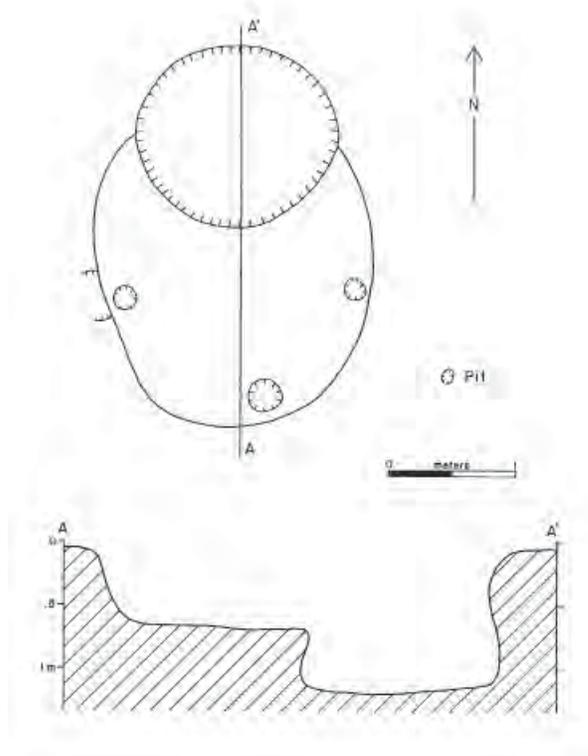


Fig. 1.1 – Late Archaic period house in the San Simon area. Courtesy of Statistical Research Inc.

In the Tucson Basin, there is no evidence of human habitation before 1000 BCE. Between 1000 BCE and 800 CE, the Late Archaic is defined by an increase in the prehistoric population, the adoption of agriculture, and the emergence of large settlements representing the beginnings of sedentary village life. Prior to this time, subsistence was based on a hunting and gathering strategy, requiring a high degree of mobility and little need for formalized housing clusters. It is now apparent that agriculture, specifically the cultivation of maize, beans, and squash, was a significant part of the economy early in Late Archaic times, although the settlement system continued to include many sites devoted to hunting and gathering. Low-elevation, riverine areas were the focus of the earliest agricultural efforts, owing as much to the diversity of wild plant foods available in the immediate vicinity as to the perennial presence of water. The actual importance of agriculture in Late Archaic subsistence is still unclear, but evidence for irrigation ditches and canals dating to 1000–900 BCE at the Costello-King site<sup>5</sup> and Las Capas<sup>6</sup> suggests a significant commitment to agriculture at a very early time.

The floodplains of the middle Santa Cruz Valley have yielded evidence of multi-seasonal, if not year-round, occupation during the Late Archaic period. Settlements consisting of several hundred pit structures have been found, although it is generally difficult to determine how many features at these sites are contemporaneous and how many represent a repeated use of the same location. Whatever the extent of contemporaneity, these sites show evidence of a distinctive architectural style, a diversity of activities, and a planned arrangement of features that suggests a significant degree of sedentism. The same characteristics, combined with an apparent functional dichotomy between large and small houses, at a number of Late Archaic sites, indicates a degree of social complexity not seen in earlier periods.

## Formative Period (1–1400 CE)

The trends toward increased sedentism, dependence on agriculture, and refinement of adaptive strategies first seen in Late Archaic times continued through the Formative period. In the Tucson Basin, as elsewhere in the Southwest, the distinction between Late Archaic and Formative culture is initially one of degree, accompanied by the wholesale adoption of pottery. The distinction is amplified by features such as the increased sophistication of pottery forms and uses, construction of larger and more formal dwellings, and a steady increase in the size and number of long-term settlements.

Early Formative Period (also referred to as Pioneer Period) sites, characterized by plain and red ware pottery, emerged in many areas of south-central Arizona. The architecture at these sites is variable, with shallow, informal Archaic-type houses co-existing with larger, more formal houses of variable shape. The houses with preserved entryways were characterized by incurving walls forming flanking elements for the entry and associated with heavy plastered pillars to either side. This construction gave the houses a distinctive, bean-shaped appearance (fig. 1.2).

The Hohokam cultural pattern that appeared in the Tucson Basin at the start of the Middle Formative period (800–1150 CE), whatever its means of introduction, had clear affiliations with developments elsewhere in Arizona, particularly the Phoenix Basin to the north and the San Pedro Valley to the east. Dramatic changes occurred in settlement patterns, and there were notable innovations in ceremonial architecture, mortuary ritual, and material culture. Traditionally known as the Colonial period (800–1000 CE), the first two centuries of the Middle Formative saw settlements grow in size and concentrate increasingly along the floodplains of the major streams and the adjacent river terraces. Long-term habitation

sites were characterized by semi-subterranean (pit) houses, often rectangular in shape and featuring distinctive entryways (fig. 1.3).

The next two and a half centuries, traditionally known as the Sedentary period (900–1150 CE), represented the height of prehistoric settlement in the Tucson Basin. Information concerning the Sedentary Period in the Tucson Basin is far greater than for any other portion of the Hohokam sequence. A distinctive local cultural system had clearly developed, with large village sites showing internal differentiation in the form of precincts. A typical precinct consisted of several domestic structures, a common courtyard, associated trash mounds and borrow areas, and sometimes a cem-

etry. Subsistence and manufacturing activities were more diverse than in earlier periods.

Considerable variability in pit house architecture attests to functional and social differentiation among Sedentary settlements. Pit structures and more formally constructed pit houses continued from the preceding period. Typically not fully rectangular in plan, pit houses were provided with entries, peripheral posts, and variable arrangements of interior roof supports. There are other houses, however, with square, oval, bean-shaped, and nearly circular forms that evidently also served as habitations (fig. 1.4). Floor areas vary widely in pit house structures during this period. At the Tanque Verde Wash site (AZ BB:13:68) in the eastern Tucson Basin, pit hous-

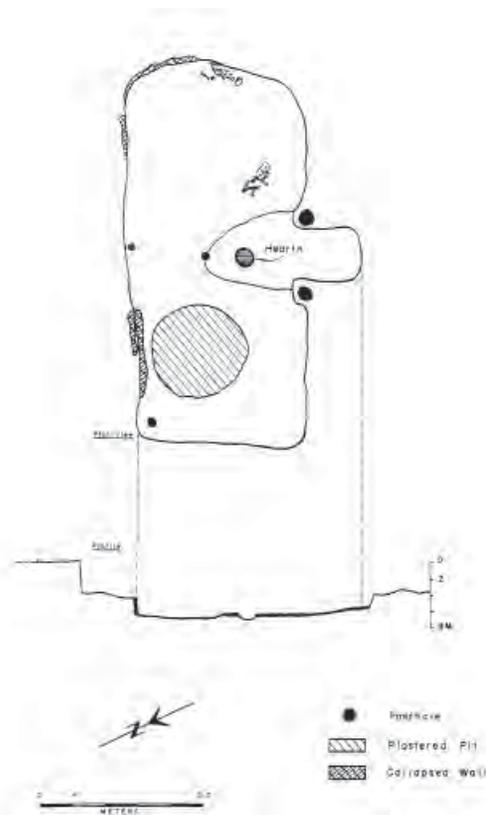


Fig. 1.2 – Plan and profile of Feature 159 at the Houghton Road site. Courtesy of Statistical Research Inc.

es ranged from 10.1 m<sup>2</sup> to 31.4 m<sup>2</sup> in floor area.<sup>7</sup> Entry orientation, floor facilities, and floor artifact assemblages also varied.

The Late Formative period (1150–1450 CE), traditionally called the Classic period in Hohokam chronologies, began with the collapse of the Hohokam regional system and the disappearance of some distinctively Hohokam features such as the ball court. Major architectural changes also occurred at this time. Puddled-earth buildings, contiguous rectangular rooms constructed on the ground surface, and compound walls enclosing habitation areas became the norm. Late in the Classic period, a reduction in the population of

the Tucson Basin is evident, and a limited number of major settlements emerged, suggesting a more intensive nucleation of the basin’s population. A declining water table, the result of environmental deterioration and a possible source of conflict between major settlements, may have contributed to the general decline. After 1450, the Classic period version of Hohokam culture ceased to exist in the Tucson Basin.<sup>8</sup>

Domestic house types described by Isabel Kelly and others encompass much of the existing architectural variation.<sup>9</sup> The “standing wall” type was a rectangular, above-ground structure built of puddled adobe walls; roof support patterns

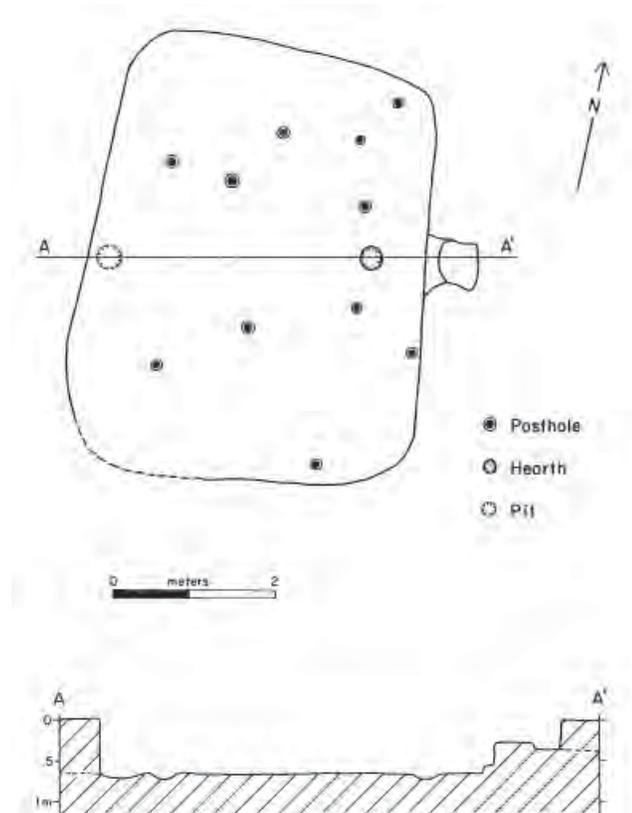


Fig. 1.3 – Plan and profile of Canada del Oro phase pit house at the Hodges Ruin. Courtesy of Statistical Research Inc.

varied and access was either through doorways or attached entries (fig. 1.5a). The “slant wall” type was a semi-subterranean structure, rectangular in shape with rounded corners (fig. 1.5b). Walls were sloping rather than upright and were plastered; entries were attached and lacked steps. Although the adobe-walled room was not prevalent until the late Classic period, the adobe-lined pit house type continued to be occupied contemporaneously with surface rooms.

There is considerable variability within each category of Classic period architecture. In the Marana area, the rooms at Muchas Casas (AZ AA:12:368) were solid, coursed adobe, lacking post or cobble reinforcement.<sup>10</sup> Semi-subterranean puddled adobe structures in the Picacho Mountains area varied in construction: some houses were built of solid adobe (fig. 1.6) while others were reinforced with posts.

Contiguous room blocks, both with and without enclosing compound walls, were initially constructed during the first half of the Classic period, during the middle Tanque Verde Phase.<sup>11</sup> It cannot be stated with any certainty whether the appearance of compounds reflects temporal, functional, or social factors. Compound enclosures appear at widely dispersed locations within the Tucson Basin and ceramic collections suggest contemporaneity with non-compound habitations.

Adobe-walled structures were the most common late Classic architectural form in the Picacho Mountains area. Both solid-wall and post-reinforced constructions were used. Simple doors in the walls and level, covered entries provided access.<sup>12</sup> Surface stick-and-mud structures also occur. Puddled adobe footings of minimal depth were used in these rectangular structures and

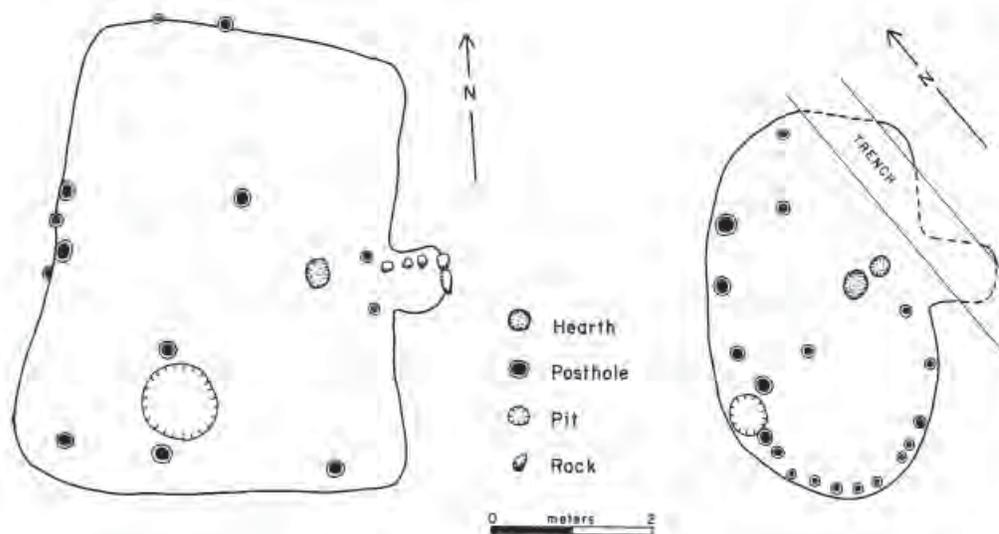


Fig. 1.4 – Rincon phase habitation structures at the West Branch site. Courtesy of Statistical Research Inc.

mud was packed around the posts supporting the superstructure. Simple wall entries were the most common form.

Non-domestic architecture also changed dramatically in the Classic period, with most platform mounds constructed in the early Classic period. The platform mound at Marana was built and used most intensively during this time. The platform mound at the University Indian Ruin (AZ BB: 9:33) (see the tour site description) was evidently constructed during the late Classic period and this site provides much of the extant information for domestic architecture at this time. Contiguous rooms of post-reinforced puddled adobe, coursed adobe, or alternating layers of cobbles and adobe form the village portion of the settlement. Contiguous houses with massive puddled adobe walls constructed during the late

Classic intruded into earlier, early Classic period pit house structures. Enclosures built around the late Classic constructions served as retaining walls and were filled with earth. On the mound surface additional contiguous massive-walled adobe rooms were built. Finally, the mound was enclosed by a compound wall.

### Protohistoric Background

A link between the prehistoric Hohokam people of the Tucson Basin and the Native Americans living in the region at the time of Spanish contact has not been definitively established, but there were undoubtedly major cultural continuities between prehistoric and protohistoric times, particularly in subsistence strategies. The Jesuit priests who first ventured into what is now northern Sonora and southern Arizona found

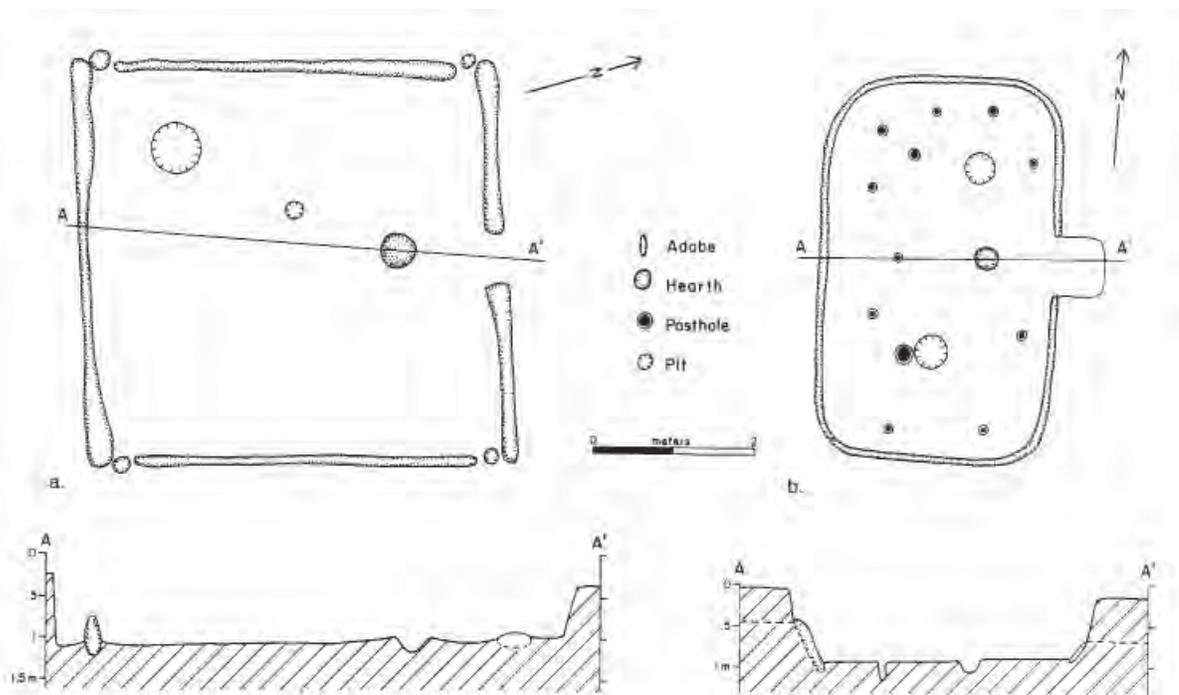


Fig. 1.5 – Classic period house types at the Hodges Ruin: (a) standing wall structure; (b) slant-wall structure. Courtesy of Statistical Research Inc.

it occupied by the Pimas altos (upper Pima), a collective name for a variety of groups speaking closely related Piman languages. One such group, known as the Sobaipuri, lived in a series of settlements along the Santa Cruz and San Pedro Rivers and practiced a primarily sedentary, agricultural way of life. Another group, the Papago (now known as the Tohono O’odham), lived in the desert region west of the Santa Cruz Valley and practiced a more nomadic way of life that was heavily dependent on wild plant foods.<sup>15</sup> There was regular interaction between the two groups, and the subsistence strategy of one was always at least a subsistence option for the other, if not a significant supplement. In this sense, the Sobaipuri and the Papago were heirs to the same

subsistence tradition, but had come to emphasize different parts of it in correspondence with their respective environments.

There were two large Sobaipuri villages along the Santa Cruz River in the vicinity of modern Tucson. One was known as Bac, the eventual location of the Jesuit mission San Xavier del Bac. The other was a settlement of uncertain name located along the Santa Cruz River near its confluence with the Rillito River. Distributed along the river between the two large villages were four smaller settlements called *rancherías* by the Spanish. The relatively dense concentration of people in the area was likely associated with an intensive agricultural subsistence strategy but

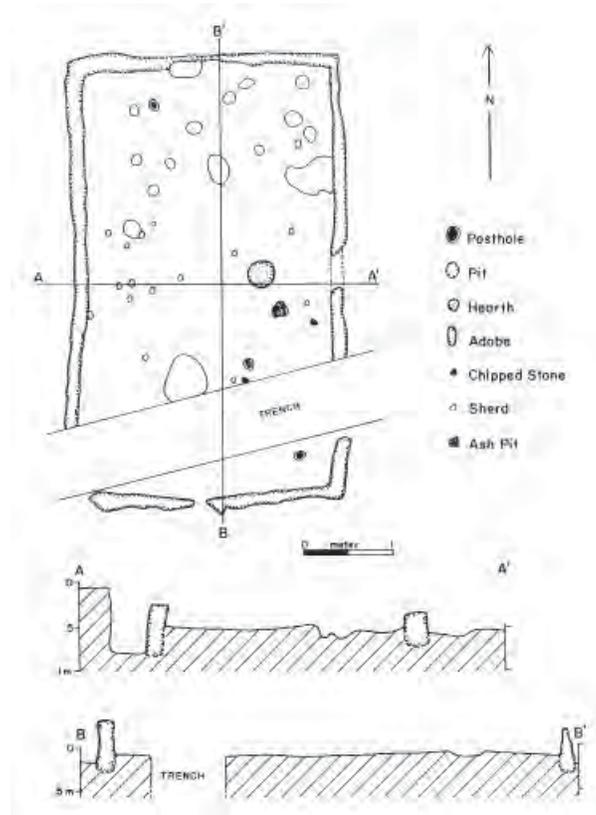


Fig. 1.6 – Puddled adobe-walled structure at the Brady Wash site. Courtesy of Statistical Research Inc.

may also have been a response to the growing threat of Apache raiding from the north and east.<sup>14</sup> The agricultural methods of the Sobaipuri, which included both canal irrigation and *ak chin* farming (diverting water from canyon mouths onto fields), were probably not substantially different from those practiced prehistorically.

Archaeological evidence of the Sobaipuri in the Tucson Basin is minimal and poorly understood, which contributes to the lack of information regarding the demise of the Hohokam culture and the nature of its descendants. A lack of both chronometric data and a cohesive framework for interpreting protohistoric material culture likewise hinders understanding of the transition from prehistory to the historical period in the Tucson Basin.<sup>15</sup> Using ethno-historic evidence, however, we can likely formulate a picture of the architectural landscape that was typical of Sobaipuri settlements. The villages were likely composed of a number of household complexes, each comprising several structures (both residential and storage) and activity areas used by a single nuclear or extended family.<sup>16</sup> Most of the structures employed a traditional post-and-beam structural system, apparently adopting techniques that were ubiquitous throughout prehistory. In addition to enclosed wall structures, ramada (wall-less) structures likely became more commonplace during this period.

## Summary

Prehistoric architecture in southern Arizona represents a marriage of form and function, with function responding predominantly to the often harsh environmental conditions of the region. Nearly all prehistoric dwellings were functional adaptations designed to minimize the effects of the desert environment. Semi-subterranean houses took advantage of the cooling effects of the thermal mass of the earth itself while the later development of massive puddled adobe-walled

structures utilized locally available materials to mitigate the effects of intense summer heat above ground. Subterranean storage pits also took advantage of the cooling effects of the earth to preserve foodstuffs and other perishable materials. The later development of the ramada structure provided protection from the intense summer heat while providing sometimes expansive work areas shaded from the sun.

## ENDNOTES

1. Linda S. Cordell, *Prehistory of the Southwest* (New York: Academic Press, 1984), 140.
2. Stephanie M. Whittlesey, Richard Ciolek-Torrello, and Matthew A. Sterner, *Southern Arizona: The Last 12,000 Years: A Cultural-Historic Overview for the Western Army National Guard Aviation Training Site* (Tucson: Statistical Research, Inc., 1994), 45.
3. W. H. Wills, *Early Prehistoric Agriculture in the American Southwest* (Santa Fe: School of American Research Press, 1988), 39.
4. Ric Windmiller, "The Late Cochise Culture in the Sulphur Spring Valley, Southeastern Arizona: Archaeology of the Fairchild Site," *The Kiva* 39 (1973): 131–169.
5. Joseph A. Ezzo and William L. Deaver, *Watering the Desert: Data Recovery at the Late Archaic Costello-King Site, Pima County, Arizona* (Tucson: Statistical Research, Inc., 1998).
6. Jonathan B. Mabry, "Las Capas and Early Irrigation Farming," *Archaeology Southwest* 13 (1999), 14.
7. Mark D. Elson, *Archaeological Investigations at the Tanque Verde Wash Site, A Middle Rincon Settlement in the Eastern Tucson Basin* (Tucson: Institute for American Research, 1986), 61–102.
8. Robert B. Neily, Richard Ciolek-Torrello, and Matthew A. Sterner, "Previous Research and Culture History," in *Investigations at Sunset Mesa*, ed. Richard Ciolek-Torrello,

Edgar K. Huber, and Robert B. Neily (Tucson: Statistical Research, Inc., 1999), 23–44.

9. Isabel T. Kelly, James Officer, and Emil Haury, *The Hodges Ruin: A Hobokam Community in the Tucson Basin* (Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1978), 11–12.

10. Todd W. Bostwick, “A Descriptive Summary of the Excavation Results at Locus D, AZ AA:12:2(ASU), Muchas Casas,” in *Field Investigations at the Marana Community Complex*, ed. T. Kathleen Henderson (Tempe: Office of Cultural Resource Management, Arizona State University, 1987), 85–119.

11. Henry D. Wallace and James P. Holmlund, “The Classic Period in the Tucson Basin,” *The Kiva* 49 (1994): 167–194.

12. Richard S. Ciolek-Torrello and David H. Greenwald, “Architecture and House Function,” in *Hobokam Settlement Along the Slopes of the Picacho Mountains, Tucson Aqueduct Project 6*, ed. Richard Ciolek-Torrello and David R. Wilcox (Flagstaff: Museum of Northern Arizona, 1988), 121–164.

13. Susan A. Brew and Bruce B. Huckell, “A Protohistoric Piman Burial and a Consideration of Piman Burial Practices,” *The Kiva* 52 (1987): 163–191, and William H. Doelle, “The Tucson Basin During the Protohistoric Period,” *The Kiva* 49 (1984): 195–211.

14 Doelle, “The Tucson Basin During the Protohistoric Period,” 195–211.

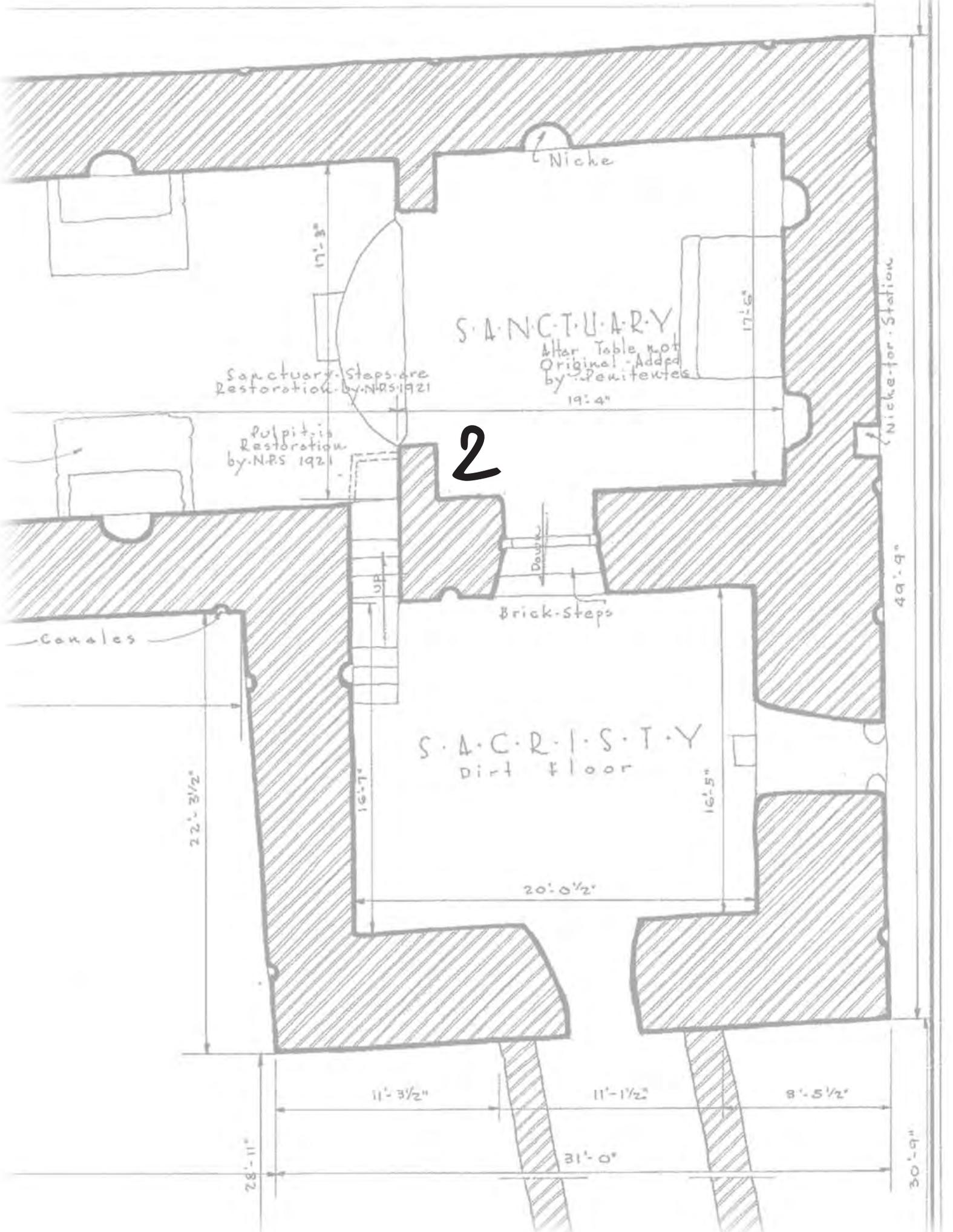
15. Neily et al., “Previous Research and Culture History,” 23–44, and John C. Ravesloot and Stephanie M. Whittlesey, “Inferring the Protohistoric Period in Southern Arizona,” in *The Archaeology of the San Xavier Bridge Site (AZ BB:13:14), Tucson Basin, Southern Arizona*, ed. John C. Ravesloot (Tucson: University of Arizona, Arizona State Museum, 1987),

16. Janet H. Strittmatter, *Historic, Vernacular Dwellings of the Tohono O’odham and Akimel O’odham* (Ms. on file, Statistical Research, Inc., 1998), 8.

*“They call themselves O’odham. The word means “People,” but it means more than that. It also means Those Who Emerged from the Earth. It means sand, or dry earth, endowed with human quality. The O’odham, or Papagos, as we call them, are of the earth. But it is of earth in a land of little rain. That is their essence. It is the secret of their life. They are the desert people.”*

*Bernard Fontana, Of Earth and Little Rain*





2

---

# ARCHITECTURE AND URBANISM OF THE PRIMERÍA ALTA DURING THE PERIODS OF SPANISH COLONIZATION AND MEXICAN INDEPENDENCE, 1692 - 1854

John Messina

**D**uring the period of Spanish colonization in the territory that is now southern Arizona and northwest Sonora, Mexico, four institutions—the mission system, the military, ranching, and mining—were responsible for European-initiated architecture and urbanism. Because of frequent attacks by Apaches, as well as occasional insurrections by local Pima Indians, most ranches and mining communities were either unable to develop fully or were destroyed during periods of hostility. Therefore, there is scant, if any, above-ground physical evidence of domestic or mining architecture built during the Spanish colonial period in the area of southern Arizona. Thus, much of what we know about the architecture of the period comes from religious and military sites (fig. 2.1).

*Presidios*, military garrisons, were built by the Spanish along the Santa Cruz and San Pedro Rivers to protect the religious missions and other interests of the Crown. These military compounds were almost always dismantled at some point and relocated for tactical or political purposes. Portable materials were thus often recycled at other locations, and, as in the case of Tucson, housing later developed on the site of the former fort. It is principally through archaeological evidence, written accounts, and a few rare maps that we are able to deduce the built form of these Spanish frontier forts. In contrast, mission communities, and especially their churches, have experienced an amazing degree of physical survival, in spite of indigenous rebellions, Apache raids, and the destruction caused by time and neglect. There are two extant colonial-era mission

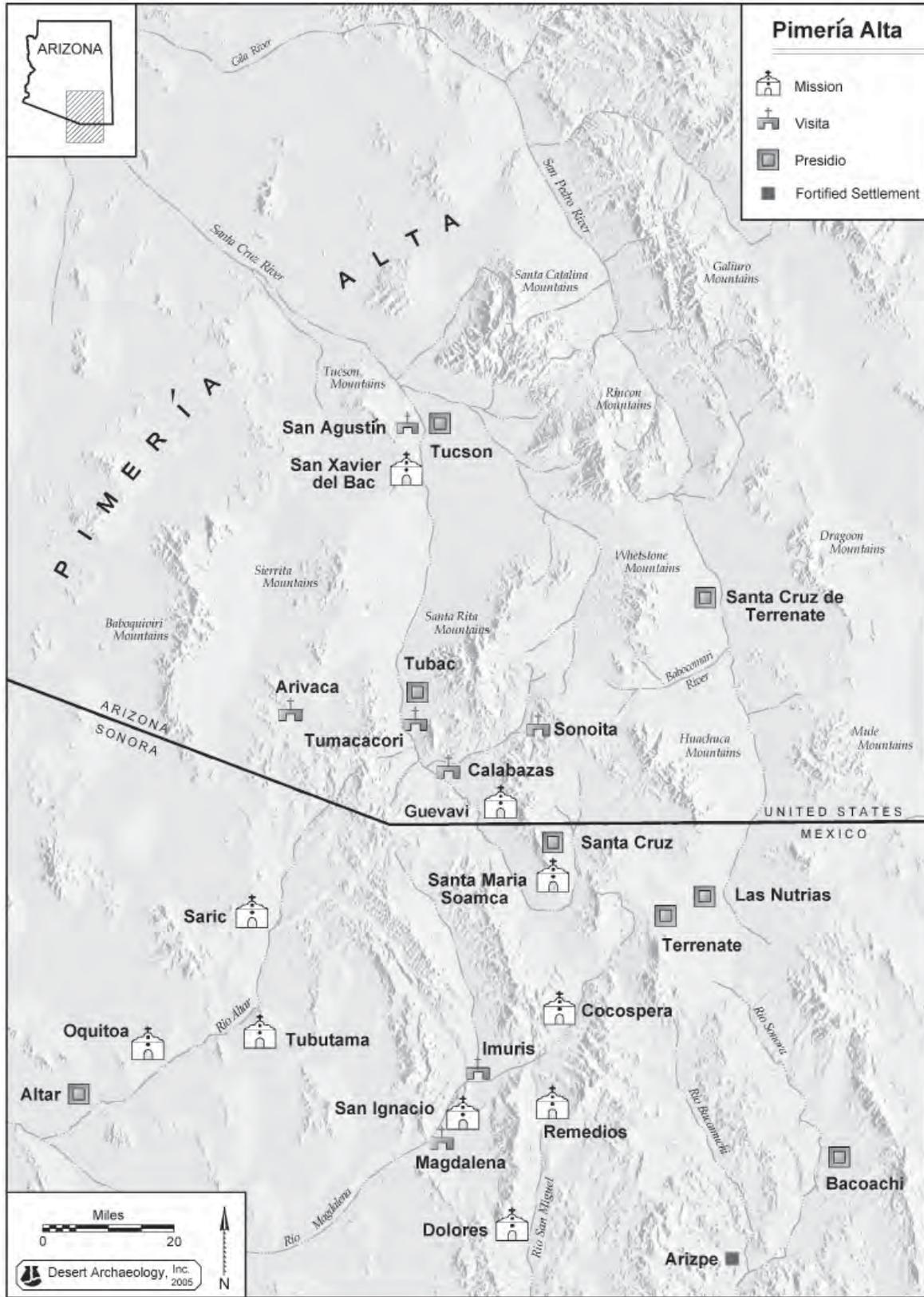


Fig 2.1 - Map of the Northern Pimería Alta indicating missions, presidios and other settlements during the Spanish colonial period. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology Inc.

churches in southern Arizona and no less than five in northwest Sonora, Mexico. That these churches have survived past hostilities, neglect, revolutions, and shifting political boundaries is close to miraculous.

## The Setting

Although the Spanish military, missionaries, and a few ranchers had advanced well into Sonora, Mexico by the middle part of the 17th century, it was not until 1687 that a Jesuit priest by the name of Eusebio Francisco Kino entered the territory known as the Pimería Alta, the land of the upper Pima Indians.<sup>1</sup> Roughly speaking, the Pimería Alta runs north to the Gila River, south to just below the Rio Magdalena in Sonora, Mexico, east to the San Pedro River which passes close to Tombstone, Arizona, and west almost as far as the Colorado River at the Arizona-California border.

The Spanish Crown's primary purpose in financing missionary activity on the far northern frontier was to have the indigenous people not only converted to Christianity but also made into productive citizens of Spain. The Spanish monarchy wanted to turn the native people into producers of commodities that would provide food and other necessary items that were required to support the military, as well as the miners and ranchers who would be following the missionaries' trails. The mines and ranches would in turn produce wealth, a portion of which would be sent to the Royal Treasury in Spain.

When Kino entered the territory of the "Pimas," he found scattered settlements of indigenous people living in relatively small groups along river and stream beds, where they could engage in flood water agriculture (see also Matthew Sterner's essay). During the drier winter season they would move their camps to higher elevations in the nearby mountains where there was game

to be hunted, as well as the availability of spring water. Because the groups were forced to move with the seasons, their architecture was light and ephemeral, unlike that of the pueblos in the northern portions of the American Southwest. It was typically constructed of cactus ribs or mesquite branches and mud. According to anthropologist Bernard Fontana,

*[Pima] architecture, moreover, was dry—a practical consideration in an arid land. And structures were practical in another way. To build them was not labor intensive and to give them up, either permanently or temporarily, caused no great sacrifice to individual or community. [The Pimas], who slept and cooked out of doors except in inclement weather, rested lightly upon their landscape.<sup>2</sup>*

The Pimas in the vicinity of present day Tucson called themselves the *Tobono O'odham*, which means "Desert (*Tobono*) People (*O'odham*)". Their architecture at the time of Spanish entry into the region was, as stated above, of dry construction, made with locally available materials and expendable. Early Spanish settlers and missionaries adopted this type of construction for their own shelter before turning to a more permanent adobe technology.

In contrast to Hohokam use of puddled adobe, the Spanish use of adobe is as a sun-dried earthen brick composed of clay, silt and sand. Its origins are open to debate; however, there are adobe ruins in Iraq dating back 6000 years. Adobe construction has been used in the American Southwest since the early to middle 1600s when the Spanish began building settlements in northern New Mexico. Around the same period, Jesuit missionaries were utilizing the material in the construction of simple hall style churches at mission sites along the Rio Sonora in the territory just east of the Pimería Alta. By the latter part of the 17th century, later arriving Jesuits were building mission churches and ancillary buildings out of adobe in the area of what is now southern

Arizona. Gradually, Spanish settlers in their need for shelter constructed with locally available materials, turned to adobe for their houses, animal shelters and other building needs. The original architecture of Spanish Colonial settlements such as Santa Fe, Albuquerque, El Paso and Tucson were all constructed of adobe.

## The Missions

Mission communities in the Pimería Alta were often attacked, both by rebellious local Pimas and by marauding Apaches. Thus, the constant threat of hostility informed early mission architecture and planning as much as program, climate, and availability of materials. The early Jesuit churches were built with thick adobe block walls and few windows. Generally, openings with the exception of the entrance were placed high above the level of a horseback rider. *Vigas*, or roof joists, were made either of cottonwood found along the river banks or pine from nearby mountains. *Savinas*, or slats, made of cactus ribs were laid across the *vigas*, and then twelve to eighteen inches of soil was placed on this substrate for insulation and rain protection. The *campanario*, or belfry, if there was one, functioned not only as housing for the mission bell but also as a lookout perch for spotting any advancing war party. The interiors were well decorated with evocative religious art in the form of paintings and dressed figures of the Virgin Mary and saints. A choir loft, sacristy, and baptistry were other standard elements. Hall churches of this description were built at almost all of the frontier missions between 1700 and 1767, the year of the Jesuits' expulsion from New Spain.

Father Kino and his fellow Jesuit missionaries were the first Europeans to build permanent settlements in the Pimería Alta. Kino's best known mission is at Bac, originally a Piman-speaking village located on the Santa Cruz River approximately seven miles south of present-day down-

town Tucson. *Bac* or *Wak* was the Piman word for "where the water emerges from its underground flow". Kino had named the site after San Francisco Xavier, thus the mission's name of San Xavier del Bac. He first visited the site in 1692 and it has been reported that he began a church building there in 1700; however, no archaeological evidence of this building has been found. The first known church for the mission was a flat-roofed, hall-type adobe structure begun around 1756 under the leadership of a Father Alonso Espinosa (see tour site description). This type of church building, with a relatively narrow width-to-length ratio, was common throughout the region.

The site plan of San Xavier del Bac followed the basic planning principles for mission compounds that had been passed down from central Mexico over several centuries, albeit in modest version due to the frontier location and limited resources. The church is the principal structure; attached to its east side was a single story *convento*, or residence, for the clergy (fig. 2.2). The convento eventually was expanded and ancillary structures for the storage of grain and the housing of animals, as well as for workshops, were built to the north and northwest, thus forming two courtyards. (During the latter part of the last century, new housing for staff and visitors replaced the earlier structures on the northwest corner of the complex.) A small burial ground and mortuary chapel were constructed on the west side shortly after the church was completed. The Indians lived in simple shelters close by and there would have been gardens for the daily food requirements of the mission. In spite of the potential for frequent attacks by Apaches, there is no indication that Mission San Xavier del Bac was ever surrounded by a wall or stockade. However, artists' sketches from as far back as 1848 do indicate the current atrio, or walled forecourt, with a single arched gate.

Approximately seven miles down the Santa Cruz River from San Xavier (the Santa Cruz River flows north to the Gila River), and across from present-day downtown Tucson, is the site of the former Mission San Agustín del Tucson (fig. 2.3). By 1771, the native Pimans had completed a convento under the supervision of a Franciscan priest, Francisco Garces. By the following year, a church was under construction. The convento was constructed of adobe, and is reported to have had rounded lookout towers at the corners.

Initially, this was the site of a Pima settlement, visited and named San Cosmé de Tucson by Father Kino approximately seventy years earlier. However, it was not until after the Jesuit expulsion in 1767 that substantial construction began and the name was changed to San Agustín. The name Tucson was derived from the Piman place name *schookson* or *stjukson*, meaning “at the base of black mountain”<sup>5</sup> The black mountain referred to is the conical hill southwest of downtown Tucson, now known as “A” Mountain.



Fig. 2.2 – Bird-eye view Mission San Xavier, 1925. Foreground structures are Tobono O'odham houses and ramadas. In the background are agricultural fields. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 10412)

San Agustín was never a permanently staffed mission but was a *visita*, or secondary mission, to San Xavier del Bac, the *cabecera* or primary mission. A *visita* did not have a resident priest but was visited by priests from the nearest *cabecera* on a regular basis. Nevertheless, photographs and sketches dating back to the middle of the

19th century show a relatively large two-story adobe convento building that is assumed to have been used for administrative and storage purposes (fig. 2.4). This structure also served as a fortress during Apache attacks. The mission site was fortified with an earthen breastwork in the center (later a perimeter wall) and had a granary, workshops, and gardens and orchards, in addition to the church and adjacent burial ground. A system of *acequias*, or irrigation ditches, delivered water from the nearby Santa Cruz River to the agricultural plots.

Approximately fifty miles south of Tucson on the Santa Cruz River is the mission site of San José de Tumacácori, now a National Historic Park administered by the United States National Park Service (see tour site description). In 1691, when Father Kino first visited what was then a Piman village on the east side of the river, he blessed the site with the name San Cayetano. By 1753, San Cayetano had been moved to the opposite side of the river and the name changed to San José (fig. 2.5). The Jesuits built a hall church on the site, and that structure was used until the current church, which was begun around 1802, replaced it in the 1820s. A cloistered convento was constructed on the east side of the church, and a mortuary chapel and cemetery to the north. The complex contained the usual residence for priests, as well as workshops, corrals, and classrooms for religious instruction. Of all the missions in the Pimería Alta, Tumacácori offers the best extant example of frontier mission planning.

Two other mission sites in the vicinity of Tubac, Los Santos Angeles de Quevavi and San Cayetano de Calabasas, are presently only small adobe ruins and are closed to the public. The former was a staffed mission (*cabecera*) while the latter was a *visita*. Originally, Quevavi was the principal mission in the area, Tumacácori being only a *visita*. But Apache attacks proved too formidable and around 1770 the role of the *cabecera* was



Fig. 2.5 – Map of Mission visita San Agustín produced in 1862 under the supervision of Major David Fergusson, United States Army commander of the Tucson Presidio. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology Inc.

shifted to Tumacácori, then closer to a presidio. Calabazas remained a visita until shortly before Mexico's independence from Spain in 1821. By then it had been taken over by new settlers and gradually converted to a working ranch, later becoming an American military post and custom station.<sup>4</sup>

There are other mission sites with extant churches in the portion of the Pimería Alta located in Mexico. Originally, all of the sites were Piman settlements, but they are now Mexican towns, and all but one, San Antonio Paduano del Oquitoa, have Franciscan churches built on the sites of original Jesuit missions. Oquitoa, although it has a Franciscan period facade and interior triumphal arch, is a traditional Jesuit hall church of the Pimería Alta with its thick adobe walls, narrow nave, exposed vigas and flat roof. By contrast, Franciscan churches were often constructed with fired rather than sun-dried adobe,

had vaulted roofs, wider width-to-length ratios, and more decorated facades.

Shortly after Mexico's successful revolt against Spanish rule in 1821, the mission system began to collapse. During the last days of 1827, Mexico passed a decree that called for the expulsion of most Spanish-born citizens, and the Franciscan missionaries were not excluded. By 1830, there were only four missionaries remaining in the whole of the Pimería Alta and the mission properties were being mismanaged by mostly corrupt civil administrators. Although there were attempts by a few sympathetic officials to salvage the mission system, their efforts proved futile. In 1843, San Xavier del Bac was described as desolate:

*Many of the burnt bricks are disintegrating, with the lime mortar washing out between them ... The mission residence has eleven rooms [and] four are roofed with*



Fig. 2.4 – The convento of the Mission Visita San Agustín as photographed at the latter part of the 19th century by A.S. Reynolds. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 2555)

*massive crossbeams supported by heavy upright timbers. One or the other beam is broken, and as the saguaro ribs they support are rotting, the entire roof is coming down.*

*The communal agricultural lands of the mission are no longer cultivated and lie barren.<sup>5</sup>*

The mission system never recovered in the Pimería Alta, and it wasn't until a half century later that secular governments, clergy, and concerned citizens, both in Mexico and the United States, sponsored preservation and restoration efforts on behalf of some of the extant churches.

## The Presidios

Following in the wake of the missions, although much fewer in number, were the Spanish presidios. During the second half of the 18th century there were no less than three Spanish presidios in what now is southern Arizona (fig. 2.1): Santa Cruz de Terrenate (1776-1780) on the San Pedro River, Tubac (1751-1776 and 1787-1821), and Tucson (1776-1821). To the south, in present day Sonora, Mexico, there were even more presidios, with three being less than a half-day horseback ride from the present border. The principal task of these military outposts was to protect the mis-



*Fig. 2.5 – Site plan of Mission San José de Tumacácori as revealed from extant structures and archaeological investigations. The mission church is outlined in bold black, and the museum/visitor center/gardens complex at the lower left of the map were constructed during the 1950s by the National Park Service. Courtesy of the National Park Service.*

sions, as well as local ranchers and miners, from Apaches and rebellious Pimas. In reality, it was practically impossible to provide much assistance to most ranches and mining communities due to their scattered locations. In addition to serving for defense, the northernmost presidios were established in order that the Spanish could more firmly take symbolic possession of their northwest territories, in the context of possible expansionist ambitions on the part of the French in Louisiana,

the English in the Floridas and Canada, and even the Russians to the far northwest.

San Ignacio del Tubac, only about 40 miles south of San Xavier del Bac on the Santa Cruz River, was an early presidio, and the first one in Spanish Arizona. The Urrutia map, drawn in 1766, almost two decades after the presidio's beginnings, shows it to be more of a settlement than a traditional fort (fig. 2.6). There appear to be no fortifications, but only a collection of scattered buildings with no apparent order. (It is reported that a stockade

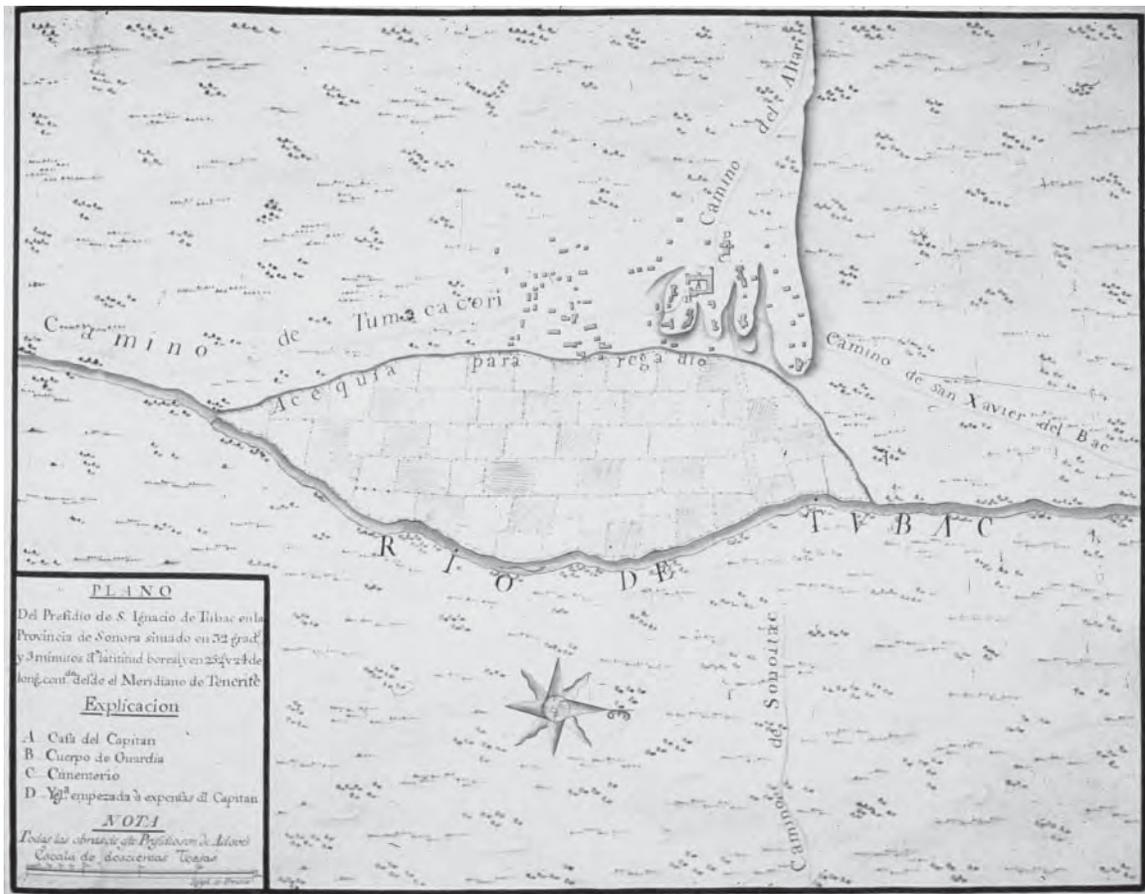


Fig. 2.6 – Map of the presidio of San Ignacio del Tubac drawn in 1766 by Joseph Urrutia, a Spanish cartographer. Notice the agricultural fields between the Río de Tubac, now the Santa Cruz River, and the settlement structures. Also, at the time of this map, there appears to be little, if any, fortifications. Within ten years of the creation of this map, the presidio was moved to present-day Tucson. Courtesy of British Museum and the Arizona State Museum.



Fig. 2.7 – Map of Spanish missions and the presidio in the vicinity of present day Tucson. The name of the mission San Cosmé de Tucson, named by the Jesuit missionary Eusebio Kino, was changed by the Franciscans to San Agustín de Tucson. San Agustín de Oiaur, also named by Kino, currently exists only as archaeological evidence. Sentinel Peak, a prominent geographic feature on the western range of the Tucson Basin, is now known as “A” Mountain. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology Inc.

wall was later constructed.) The largest structure is purported to have been a guardhouse and commandant’s residence. A chapel lay nearby, as did clusters of small barracks. The buildings were likely constructed of adobe with vigas of cottonwood and mud roofs. Settlers seemed to live in close proximity, and their fields lay between the settlement and the Santa Cruz River. There would have been *acequias*, or irrigation ditches, delivering water to the crops of corn, wheat and beans. As can be seen in the Urrutia map, Tubac was situated at a crossroads. The north-south road led from Bac to Tumacácori, and the east-west route led from the Altar Valley of Sonora, Mexico, where there was another presidio and several missions, to a visita at Sonoita to the east (fig. 2.1). These routes continued to expand in all four directions. The north-south route became a segment of New Spain’s westernmost Camino Real, and it was from Tubac, in 1775, that Juan Bautista de Anza led a group of Spaniards to found the city of San Francisco.

Because of its lack of significant fortifications, the presidio at Tubac was difficult to defend. At the same time, the mission at Bac was under constant attack by Apaches. In 1775, Hugo O’Conor, the military commander of northern New Spain, made the decision to move the Tubac Presidio north to present-day Tucson. However, the Tubac garrison was reestablished in 1787 and was occupied by a small contingent of Spanish troops until Mexican independence in 1821. Tubac was never totally or permanently abandoned by settlers; therefore, it qualifies as the oldest continually occupied Spanish settlement in Arizona.

By the mid-1700s, the mission of San Xavier del Bac, together with its visita at San Agustín de Tucson, was perceived by the Spanish as more strategically important than Tubac. This area some 50 miles north of Tubac was thought to be important in protecting the Gila River route to

California and a better defensive position to resist Apache raids. More than likely, there was also a strategy to prevent the Pimas in the area from rebelling as they had done in 1751. Therefore, an official decision was made in 1775 to relocate the presidio to a site on the east side of the Santa Cruz River, almost opposite of the existing fortified mission visita. This position allowed control of the river corridor, as well as having the advantage of a high observation post on Black Mountain, later referred to as Sentinel Peak (and now called "A" Mountain). Construction of the presidio moved along slowly. At first there was only a wooden palisade, if any fortifications at all; the adobe walls were not completed until 1783. There was a small spring, *el ojito*, just south of the presidio's location, a fact that probably played no small part in the choice of the site (fig. 2.7).

Normally, a Spanish presidio followed the model of Roman military colonies or *castra*. The best understanding of the Tucson Presidio's final plan can be gleaned from a map drawn in 1862, approximately six years after Mexican troops turned over the fort to the United States military (fig. 3.1) (see tour site description). In this map, the result of a survey ordered by a Major David Fergusson, Commander of the District of Western Arizona, the adobe perimeter wall, which would have been three feet wide at its base, ten to twelve feet high, and approximately 600 feet long on each side, seems to have vanished. The boundaries of the presidio are defined by numerous discrete buildings that originally must have backed up to the high, thick wall. There are two ill-defined plazas shown, La Plaza Militar and La Plaza de las Armas, separated by several large structures and an east-west street, Calle de la Guárdia. The presidio would have contained the usual barracks, adjacent to the perimeter wall, office quarters, stables and other buildings for animals, and a chapel, since the military, as per Spanish policy, would have been kept separate,

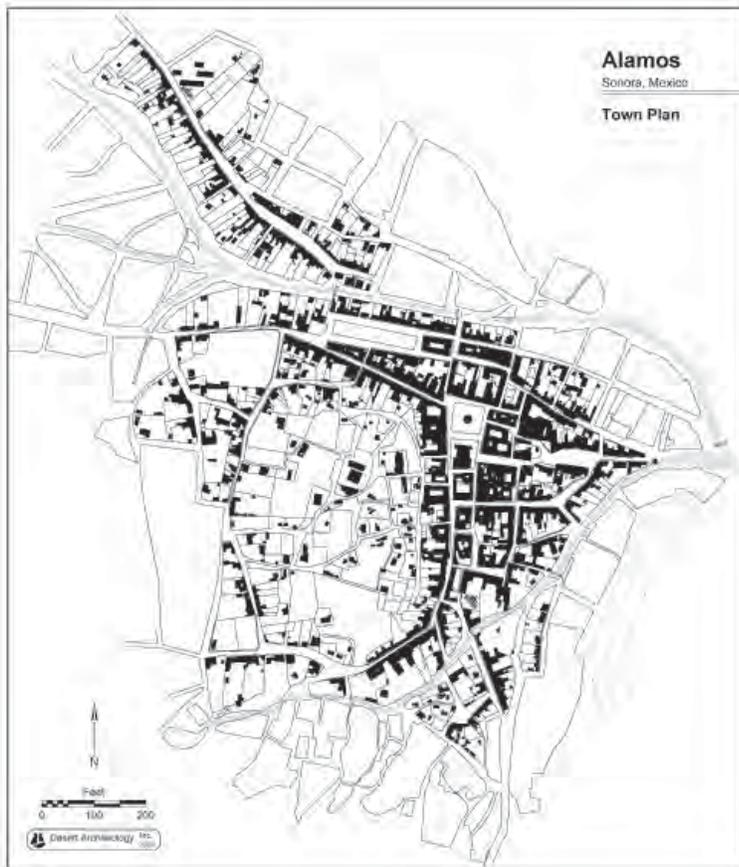
as much as possible, from the mission across the river and its Indian population.

In 1853, with the signing of the Gadsden Purchase, or *El Tratado de La Mesilla* as it is called in Mexico, the territory between the Gila River and the current international border became United States territory. By 1856, Mexican troops had vacated the Tucson Presidio, leaving it under American control. Although they departed, their Presidio of San Agustín del Tucson became the nucleus of a new city in the Sonoran Desert.

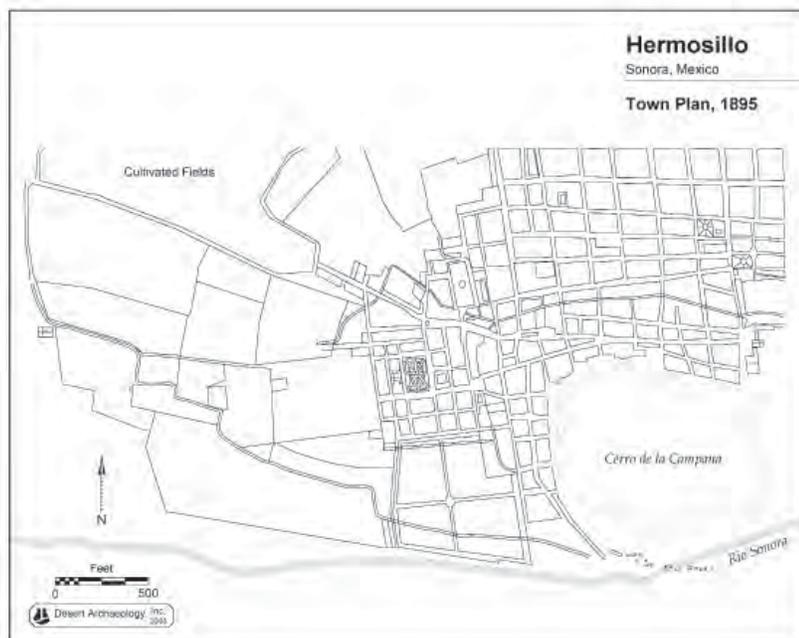
## Secular Settlements

Because of the Pimería Alta's frontier location and its distance from the center of Spanish, and later Mexican, power in Central Mexico, urban settlement patterns did not precisely and consistently follow the model laid out in 1573 by Philip II of Spain. His mandate, based on Roman planning principles and known as the "Law of the Indies," prescribed, among other things, how new towns in Spanish colonies were to be built. Central plazas with surrounding arcaded buildings, placement of the principal church, and grids of narrow, shaded streets in hot climates radiating from the plaza were all clearly spelled out in the "Laws". A few towns in northwest Mexico followed these mandates reasonably well, considering their remote locations and, in some cases, irregular topography. Alamos, once a wealthy silver mining community in the southern part of Sonora, has a plaza surrounded by remarkable arcaded buildings, as well as a stately church and narrow, shaded streets (fig. 2.8). However, as one proceeds further from the plaza, the grid dissolves into a more organic plan that displays more respect to nature and expediency than to the will of the Spanish Crown.

Hermosillo, Mexico, the capital of the state of Sonora and initially settled in 1741, contains a beautiful cathedral (constructed in the early 20th



*Fig. 2.8 – Plan of Alamos, Sonora, a 17th century Mexican mining town, only a one-day drive from Tucson. A traditional plaza and church are shown in the center-right of the map. The less dense area in the center is the hill, Cerro de Guadalupe. The long rectangle, center-left, is the Alameda, or public park. Drawn by John Messina and Lei Jin, Southwest Center, The University of Arizona.*



*Fig. 2.9 – Map of Hermosillo, Sonora, circa 1895. The principal plaza and the cathedral are located on the left side of the map. Notice that even at this early period of the city's development, diagonal street patterns and much larger blocks already were violating the original pattern and urban scale. During the early part of the 20th century, a railroad right-of-way bisects diagonally parts of the grid thereby compounding the damage. Drawn by José Velázquez, courtesy of Eloy Méndez Sainz, El Colegio de Sonora.*

century) facing a fine principal plaza, and streets advancing away from the plaza forming grids of blocks with low adobe-walled row houses (figs. 2.9 and 2.10). But, like so many towns and cities in northern Mexico, the grid rapidly erodes away from the center as a result of the natural topography, and the increased size of blocks, as well as streets and railroad tracks slashing through the original layout at non-conforming angles. Nevertheless, one still feels Hermosillo to be a Latin city, even toward the outskirts, because of the predominantly low-rise but high-density land use, not to mention the rarified urban street life and graphic scenography of many buildings. Unfortunately, though, as one reaches the fringes of the city in the area of the *periférico* (surrounding roadway loop) all of this interest breaks down

into a kind of irrational congestion of industrial slums and extremely pedestrian-unfriendly streets—the opposite of the inner city. Here, the northern Mexican city has learned its North American neighbor’s worst habits.

In the case of Tucson, while the presidio was constructed as a relatively compact village, both soldiers and civilians built houses outside its walls, albeit close by, during both the Spanish and Mexican periods. Tucson even had a public plaza just a few blocks south of the fort that became the civic center of the Mexican community, especially after a church was placed on its eastern side during the 1860s.<sup>6</sup> At this time, the urban form was still open, especially away from the major east-west and north-south streets, but a strong street-fronting density of row houses was



*Fig. 2.10 – Principal Plaza and Cathedral in Hermosillo, Sonora. The recently restored plaza appears as it did at the time the Cathedral was built in the early part of the 20th century. True to the principles of the Laws of the Indies, a municipal palace, or government building, faces the plaza on the opposite side from the Cathedral. Courtesy of John Messina, Southwest Center, The University of Arizona*

beginning to develop along those principal lanes (for later 19th century Tucson history see also Anne M. Nequette's essay) .

Anglos coming through Tucson, however, were for the most part not positively impressed by its built form. A traveling journalist by the name of Ross Browne, visiting in 1864, commented as follows:

... [the traveler] emerges to find himself on the verge of the most wonderful scatteration of human habitation his eye ever beheld—a city of mud boxes, dingy and dilapidated, cracked and baked into a composite of dust and filth; littered about with broken corrals, sheds, bake-ovens, carcasses of dead animals, and broken pottery; barren of verdure. Parched, naked, and grimly desolate in the glare of a southern sun.

With the departure of Hispanic authority in 1856 and the arrival of Anglo-Saxon Americans in greater numbers, along with the railroad in 1880, the architecture and urbanism of Tucson metamorphosed into hybrid forms reflecting both cultures. The prejudicial view of Hispanic building practices held by many Anglo-Americans in the late 19th century and first half of the 20th century, along with neglect, has caused almost all of Tucson's Spanish and Mexican period architecture to vanish. Refreshingly, in southern Arizona today, much of this prejudicial attitude toward the Spanish architectural heritage has vanished in turn. The problem now is that Hispanic period architecture is being emulated to a fault, with superficial pastiches appearing in countless housing developments and commercial centers. Fortunately, there remain numerous examples of Sonoran domestic architecture from the period immediately following the Gadsden Purchase, and these extant structures provide a much more authentic reading of Tucson's cultural heritage.

#### ENDNOTES

1. *Pima* was the name bestowed by the Spanish on the indigenous people occupying scattered settlements throughout the west-central section of northwest Mexico. These people spoke a mutually understandable language and so the Spanish grouped them into one linguistic base. When the Jesuit missionary Eusebio Francisco Kino arrived in what is now northwest Sonora, Mexico and southern Arizona, he referred to the people he encountered there as *Pimas Altos* or northern Pimas in order to distinguish them from those living further to the south in the same region; correspondingly, their territory was called the "Pimería Alta". See Bernard L. Fontana, "The O'odham," in James E. Officer et al., eds., *The Pimería Alta* (Tucson: The Southwestern Mission Research Center, 1996), 19.

2. *Ibid.*, 25-26.

3. C. L. Sonnichsen, Tucson, *The Life and Times of an American City* (Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1982, 1987), 7.

4. Officer et. al., eds., *The Pimería Alta*, 85 – 90.

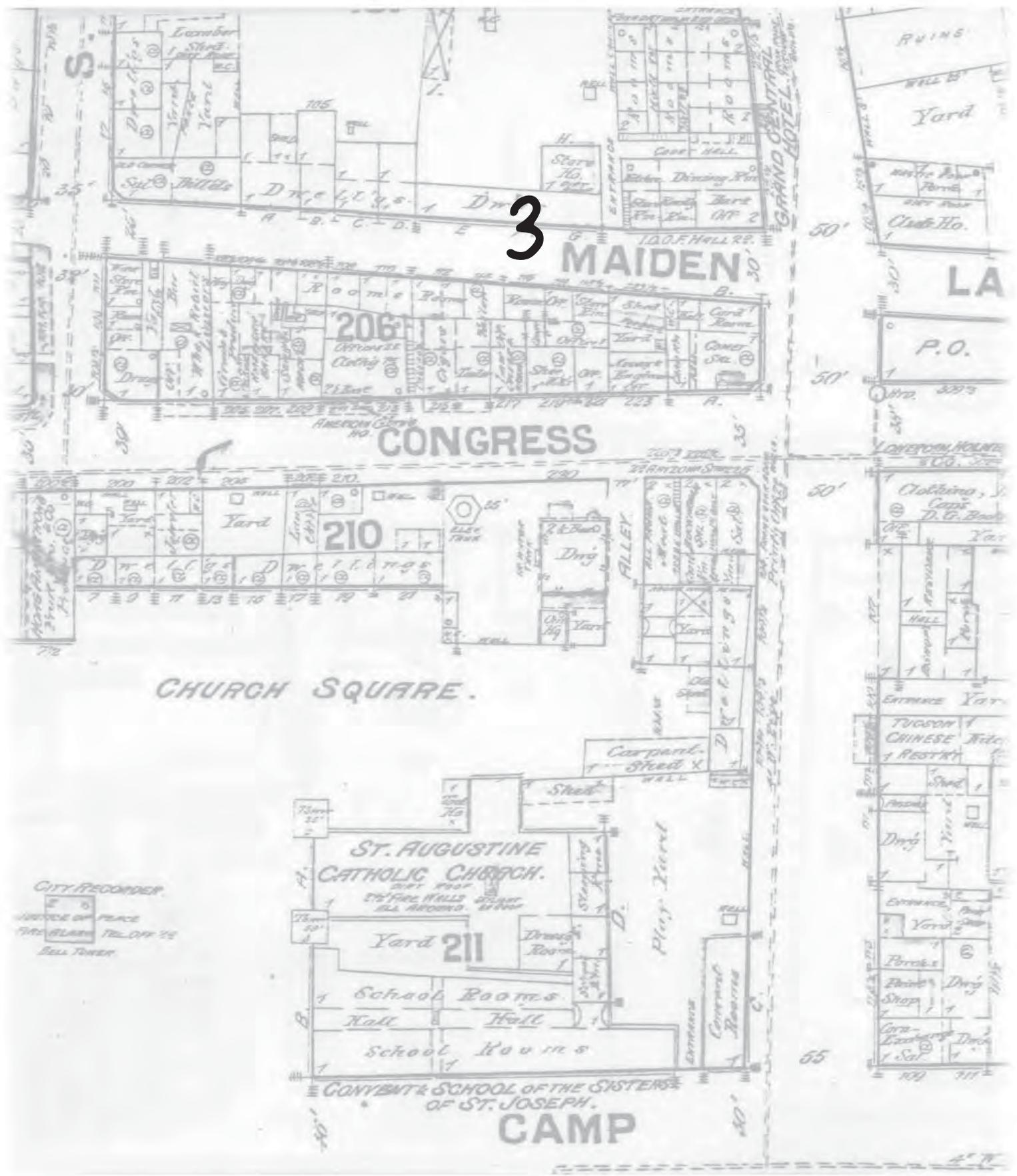
5. Kieran McCarty, ed., *A Frontier Documentary, Sonora and Tucson 1821 – 1848* (Tucson: The University of Arizona Press, 1997), 89.

6. For an interesting perspective on the social-political aspects of an Hispanic plaza in a community that was rapidly becoming anglicized see Abigail Van Slyck, "What the Bishop Learned," *Journal of Arizona History* 39/2 (Summer 1998): 121-40.

7. J. Ross Browne, *Adventures in Apache Country: A Tour Through Arizona and Sonora* (Tucson: The University of Arizona Press), 132-133.

8. During a period of "urban renewal" in the early 1970s, the civic and business leadership of Tucson maneuvered to build a large convention center (or as it is euphemistically called, the Tucson Community Center), in an area south of downtown where hundreds of adobe houses occupied by Mexicans and Chinese stood. Given that the mass demolition the project entailed took place on the site of some of Tucson's first dwellings, it is highly likely that some colonial and Mexican period structures were

lost. For an excellent discussion of what was lost and the damage done to the urban core of Tucson, see Juan Gomez-Novy and Stefanos Polyzoides, "A Tale of Two Cities: The Failed Urban Renewal of Downtown Tucson in the Twentieth Century," *Journal of the Southwest* 45/1-2, special architectural issue, ed. John Messina (Spring/Summer 2003): 87-119.



3

CHURCH SQUARE.

CITY RECORDER  
 JURISDICTION OF PLACE  
 FIRE ALARM TELEGRAPH  
 BELL TOWER

ST. AUGUSTINE  
 CATHOLIC CHURCH.  
 211  
 YARD  
 School Rooms  
 Hall  
 School Rooms  
 CONVENT & SCHOOL OF THE SISTERS  
 OF ST. JOSEPH.

CAMP

MAIDEN

CONGRESS

LA

P.O.

Clothing, Caps, Tr. G. Book

TUGSON & CHINESE RESTAURANT

Porches, Paint, Dry, Shop, Cor. Hardware, Dry, Salt

55

47

---

# ARCHITECTURE OF THE TERRITORIAL PERIOD IN SOUTHERN ARIZONA (1848-1912)

Anne M. Nequette

The architecture that much of southern Arizona identifies as territorial is usually rectangular in plan, having thick, smooth adobe walls, with small vertical openings, and crowned by a pitched metal roof. This is intriguing, not only because the form encapsulates a second major cultural change to occur in southern Arizona, but its appeal to contemporary Tucsonans suggests that it has “present value”.<sup>1</sup> Arizona became a territory of the United States through two treaties with Mexico: northern Arizona was acquired in 1848 by means of the Treaty of Guadalupe-Hidalgo, with the area south of the Gila River gained through the Gadsden Purchase of 1853 (fig. 3.1). Both treaties were part of the larger land acquisition policy of the Federal government in the 19th century. For historians, architects, and preservationists, the use of the singular term “territorial” is too narrow, in that it binds a multi-phased cultural transformation to a singular geo-political and temporal moment.

Indeed, it is the clash between a well-established New World Hispanic or Indio-Hispanic culture and the different culture of newly arrived citizens of the United States, with their essentially antithetical world view, that resulted in a period of great cultural and architectural change. This transformation is most apparent at the scale of the neighborhood and city, but it is also visible in building form, material, and smaller constructional or ornamental details.<sup>2</sup> Whereas the Hispanic conception of the city was primarily social and therefore communal and spatial, the “rugged individualism” of “Americans”<sup>3</sup> is seen in the physical and expressive separation of structures.

The architecture of this period in Southern Arizona can be seen as having two principal phases, separated by the arrival of the railroad



Fig. 5.1 – Map of Western United States, 1848-1853. Although most of the land now comprising the western United States was surrendered by Mexico at the end of the Mexican-American War as part of the 1848 Treaty of Guadalupe-Hidalgo, Tucson lies in the area south of the Gila River which was added later through the Gadsden Purchase of 1853. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology Inc.

in the 1880s. In turn, each of those phases can be subdivided. Before the arrival of the railroad, the responses of the native Pima, the Spanish, and the Mexicans to the Sonoran desert landscape were similar in their use of local materials to build communal structures for shelter and shade. Although they didn't know it at the time, their architectural responses were strikingly similar to those of the ancient Hohokam and Salado from the 13th and 14th centuries.<sup>4</sup> The new American settlers, many of them arriving by railroad themselves, brought an entirely different vision, fueled by their connection to a much larger network of cultures, commerce, and technology.

The first phase of architectural transformation was marked by modification through *addition* to existing Mexican or Sonoran structures, the second through *hybridization*, i.e., the use of elements from both cultural groups, followed by *substitution* of American materials, building forms, or land use patterns and finally by *assimilation* into the larger architectural movements occurring in the United States. The following brief discussion of the Territorial period in Southern Arizona will tend to focus on Tucson, as it not only had the greatest population and longest period of settlement in the region, but also preserves to this day numerous extant examples of this complex architectural transformation.

## American Territorial Period: Pre-railroad (1848-1880)

Architectural transformation in Tucson begins with the first generation of Americans arriving in the 1850's. Although a few Americans arrived as early as 1826 in search of fur, it was the 1849 California gold rush that brought them through Tucson in large numbers. English was the common language, and those of English descent probably formed the largest ethnic group, but there were Germans, Italians, and French as well. It is unlikely that any of these early wanderers settled

permanently; rather, settlement took place at the time of the Gadsden Purchase.

The first American settlers found an agrarian center spanning the flowing Santa Cruz River, a dominant linear feature in the landscape marked by brilliant cottonwoods and mesquite trees. The most formidable structures were the Mission San Xavier del Bac, seven miles south, the *visita* known as San Cosmé or San Agustín, on the west side of the Santa Cruz River, and the presidio on the east side. The majority of the settlers were single males who married into local Mexican families and adopted the established architecture of their new home.<sup>5</sup> Due to continued attacks by the Apaches, Tucson's population of fewer than 500 was confined to an area in and around the presidio. Growth occurred along the original *Calle Real* (soon renamed Main Avenue) into the areas that are today Downtown and the Barrio Viejo. Mail and stage lines were established in 1857, followed by the permanent settlement of American merchants by 1858 making Tucson a commercial and transportation center on the route to California.

The urban landscape from 1848 until ca. 1861 maintained the Hispanic land use pattern, with the adobe façade of the house or commercial building set at the street line, side walls shared with neighbors, and private space positioned at the back of the house or interior of the block. The basic component of this system was the *sala* or room used for all functions and in all types of buildings. A good example of this is the Telles Block (see tour site description). At the scale of the building, these structures are also essentially *Sonoran* in character. Built of adobe, the most available, economical, and climactically reasonable form of construction, they employed timber to support the weight of an insulating earthen roof. Timbers were obtained by cutting down trees on the local river banks until that supply was depleted or, if funds permitted, hauling tall,

straight pines from the Santa Rita and Santa Catalina Mountains.

The American Civil War (1861-1865) brought tremendous change to Tucson. With the transfer of troops from southern Arizona to battlegrounds in the East, the settlement was so vulnerable to continued Apache attacks that population severely declined. When some of the Union forces returned in 1862, Major David Fergusson was charged with protecting the fatigued town and documenting land ownership in order to settle disputes among Hispanics and Americans. The map he had produced, the first surviving such representation of the settlement of Tucson, indicates the location of the presidio walls with a dashed line (fig. 3.2). A few structures stand along that line, with many others spread out to the south and west in spite of the threat of Apache raids.

Two pieces of federal legislation had a tremendous impact on the development of western settlements such as Tucson: the 1862 Homestead Act created a system of land ownership that guaranteed titles, both for new claims and those pre-existing from the Spanish and Mexican periods. Anyone who was willing to pay a nominal fee and build and occupy a simple structure could acquire 160 acres of land located in the "public domain," as long it was unencumbered by previous claims. The purpose of this policy, as with all previous land policies initiated by the United States was to use population as the major investment to "Americanize," and thereby secure, the entire western portion of the country. The 1877 Desert Land Act increased the allotments from 160 to 640 acres, thus creating a boom in cattle ranching, farming, and land speculation. Of the hundreds of people who filed claims, most were dependent for their livelihoods on new residents: i.e., growth had become an industry.

With the close of the Civil War in 1865, the most significant obstacle to growth in Tucson was the



continued Apache resistance. Pacification efforts were only partially successful, requiring the presence of the military which was now re-located to the southeast edge of the settlement in the military plaza. The influx of new settlers, including Americans of African descent, bolstered growth in the old presidial core, resulting in a cohesive neighborhood.

Buildings began to include minor modifications to the existing Sonoran structures, from piecemeal additions of new materials and forms to larger additions of roofs and porches. The resulting '*Transformed Sonoran*' structures benefitted from the thermal properties of their thick adobe walls and roofs. The flat roof with its protective parapet was often used as a place to sleep in the summertime or from which to defend against Apache attacks. For the very few who could afford it, the occasional freight wagon loads of construction materials such as milled lumber, tin, and even brick, set their dwellings apart.

Without written or other documentation, it can be very difficult to know when additions were made to preexisting structures. For example, one of the most distinctive ornamental elements in Tucson is the Greek Revival pediment above doors or windows, as seen in the 1864 Sam Hughes House. It is possible that the Charles O. Brown House was built before 1860, and that the new coat of stucco with faux quoins at the corners was part of the 1868 remodel. The wood-framed roof seen on the 1877 Verdugo House was obviously added to it after initial construction because the *canales* or rainwater spouts needed for the original flat roof were simply left in place.

The 1870s was a period of tremendous growth with a major shift in the conception of the urban landscape evident on the town plan surveyed and patented by S.W. Foreman in 1872 (fig. 3.3). Growth and cultural diversity are evident in the number of new businesses, hotels, churches, and parks that were established following incorpo-

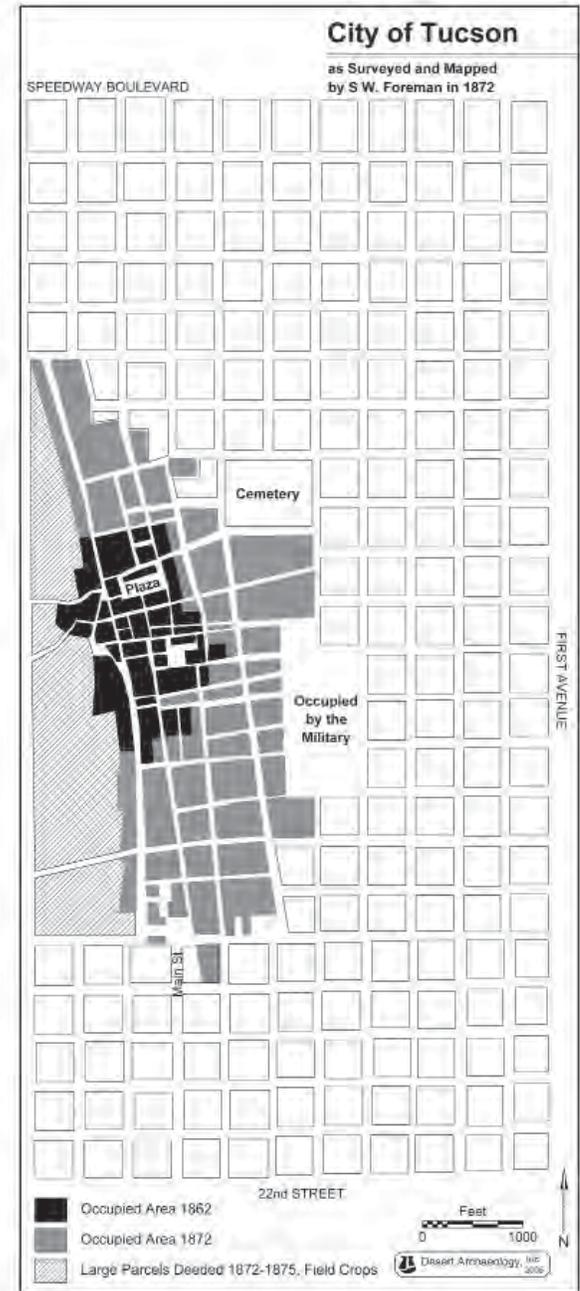


Fig. 3.5 – Foreman Map, 1872, showing the emerging American grid.

ration of the town in 1871. Germans, English, Mexicans, French, Chinese, native Papago and Manso Apache, African-Americans, Catholics, Protestants and Jews all contributed to the commercial and social life of the frontier town.<sup>6</sup> There were plenty of saloons and two red-light districts,

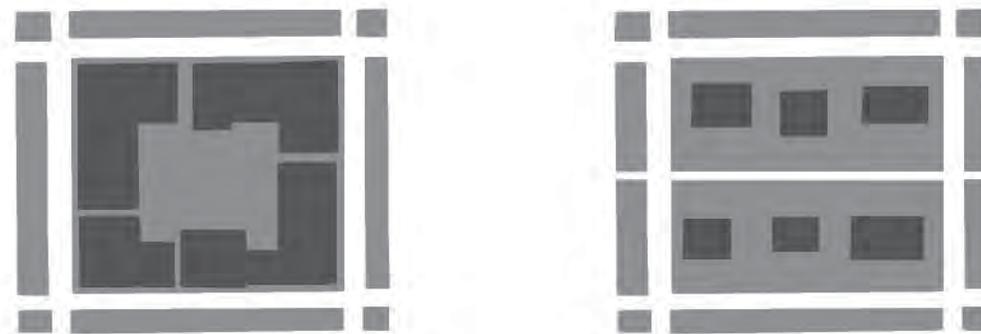
plus three parks for family entertainment, one of which provided restaurants and spaces for playing billiards, bowling, and dancing. The Plaza de la Mesilla, adjacent to the cathedral, was the town's principal social space.

Unlike the Hispanic model of urban form in which the contiguous vertical walls of adjacent buildings defined the streets, Tucson's new and larger grid of 400-foot square blocks, separated by 80' wide streets and 27' wide alleys,<sup>7</sup> was based on the American traditions of William Penn and clearly served as a device for the democratic division of land. Not evident on the Foreman plan but embedded within it was a desire to separate each building from its neighbors and to place it back from the street (fig. 3.4). Although most commercial and residential activities in Tucson still took place within the adobe blocks and the social space of the street, there was already one exception. In 1878 the first Protestant (Presbyterian) church was built as a free-standing, French Gothic structure facing the Plaza de las Armas, in distinct contrast to the Sonoran architecture surrounding it. It is probable that one other change began to occur: as parks became the center of social activities for Americans, fewer social functions for all Tucsonans took place at the Plaza de la Mesilla.

## American Territorial Period: Post-Railroad (1880-1914)

By far the most significant impact on southern Arizona during the Territorial period was the arrival of the railroad in the 1880s. Not only did the railroad bring a tremendous influx of Americans with Eastern tastes in everything from food to architecture, but it also brought large quantities of mass-produced building materials and new technologies, causing the relatively rapid transformation of Tucson from Sonoran pueblo to American town. The city's infrastructure kept pace, with telephone service available in 1880-81 and gaslights, electricity and water by 1882, by which time Tucson's population had surpassed 7,000 persons. The railroad tracks cut a diagonal line across the northeast quadrant of the township, creating a barrier and at the same time drawing development away from the presidial center (fig. 3.5).

A primary desire of many new citizens was to employ recognizable symbols of their membership in a new cultural group, yet recognition of the benefits of the Hispanic urban pattern and the use of adobe walls led to a general hybridization of forms and materials at the time of construc-



*Fig. 3.4 – Typical Sonoran and American blocks. The Spanish urban typology included attached row houses with a contiguous street façade protecting the communal inner-block courtyard. In contrast, the American model included large yards surrounding detached houses with no common area. This contrast distinguishes the Spanish and American urban morphologies of defining open space versus defining objects, respectively. Courtesy of Mark Barmann*

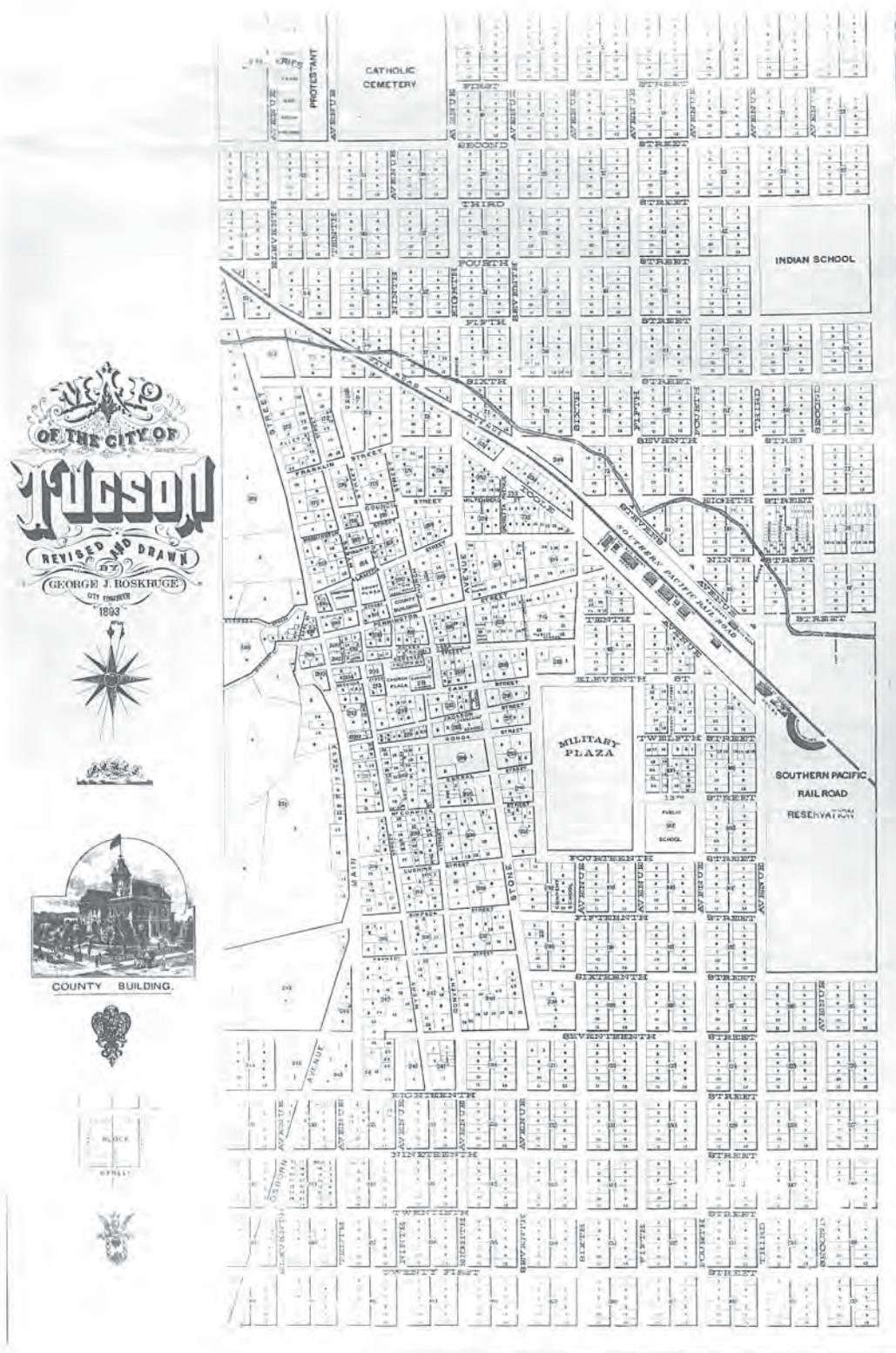


Fig. 5.5 – Roskrue Map, 1895. With exception of the railroad, the one-mile street grid that was adopted at the time of township incorporation, is ordered to the cardinal points and neatly engulfs the existing settlement. This grid became the model for subsequent growth. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson

tion. Thus individual structures and the cityscape of this period is considered Transitional. Most homes were still built of adobe but might not have been sited at the street line or have shared a wall with a neighbor. The more elaborate expressions of Americanism included use of the gable roof and porches, placed either at the front of the house, providing a private outdoor area, or in the back for sleeping. The best examples of this type in Tucson are the Kruttschnitt House, now El Presidio Bed & Breakfast, built before 1886 with an 1899 addition, the Valdez house and the 1878 Blenman house with its 1890s addition.

Territorial architecture throughout southern Arizona incorporated national vernacular (or “folk”) house types that became popular after the arrival of the railroad. These vernacular house types may be identified by certain morphological characteristics, including the building footprint (e.g., rectangular, square, L-shaped, or T-shaped) and roof type (e.g., gable, hipped, or pyramidal). Variations on standard building plans included the hall-and-parlor house (typically two rooms wide and one room deep) (fig. 3.6), the massed-plan house (typically two rooms deep, a varying number of rooms wide), the pyramidal cottage (a square plan of four rooms covered by a pyramidal roof), and the four-square plan (a

two-story variation of the pyramidal cottage). Variations of the pyramidal roof include the slightly ridged pyramid, the truncated pyramidal (with a flat plane on top), and the gable-on-hip pyramid, which often contains louvered grills at the gable ends to facilitate ventilation (fig. 3.7). As constructed in southern Arizona, these types of vernacular housing incorporated locally available building materials, including adobe and brick, and construction techniques such as wood frame construction.

As was the case in both the Hispanic and the new American model, major public buildings such as courthouses or churches were distinct objects in the urban landscape, thus making the order of the town comprehensible. For example, the Second Pima County Courthouse, built in 1881 is both completely freestanding and in an imported style.<sup>8</sup> Bishop Salpointe, arriving in 1880, spearheaded the construction of a Catholic school and the new adobe cathedral, Saint Augustine, built on the Plaza de la Mesilla, from then on known as Church Plaza.

By 1886, when the Apache leader Geronimo finally surrendered, the worst of the Apache wars were over, allowing Tucson to become the major commercial and urban center of southern



*Fig. 3.6 – Hall-and-parlor side gable house type with a drop-sided porch and rear addition, School Hill, Bisbee. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

Arizona. The University of Arizona, considered an undesirable appropriation from the territorial legislature, was awarded to Tucson in 1885. Its 40 acres of land donated by two gamblers in 1886 were located inconveniently about one mile from the railroad station, but nevertheless encouraged growth in that direction for the next two decades. In 1887, the first campus building, the School of Mines, now called Old Main, was built. Its eclectic mixture of vernacular and historical references, with deep porches on all sides, made it an unlikely but appropriate model for architecture in Tucson.

The next recognizable change occurred both in buildings and at the scale of the street. The new idiom is characterized as *American Territorial*<sup>9</sup> because it can be seen in structures that are recognizably related to the Transformed Sonoran in their use of simple geometry, massive walls, porches, and a gable roof, but which substitute brick for adobe and, with only one exception, are free-standing buildings, again signaling association with “civilized” culture. The best examples include the 1890 Olcott House, Old Main, the 1907 Valencia House, and the 1909 Brick Row Houses.

Although the urban landscape of Tucson during the 1880s and 1890s is mostly the result of addition and hybridization, the loss of three key features—water supply, streetscapes, and the plaza—is significant. In 1887, a severe earthquake not only severely damaged what remained of the *Convento* (see John Messina’s essay) but created a fissure in the ground which caused surface water to sink into an underground aquifer. This led to a destructive cycle of damming and bank erosion, finally resulting in the deterioration of the agricultural floodplain.

Streetscapes began to lose cohesion as more private homes followed the pattern of placement set back from the street, creating gaps in street frontages like missing teeth in a smile. Such homes used yards and porches to create zones of separation between public and private.

In hindsight, the loss of Church Plaza, the largest and most prominent Hispanic social space in the city, seems inevitable, considering the combination of Americans’ cultural bias towards commerce and land values and the facts of the urban geography (fig. 3.8). Not only did the city perceive the plaza to be “unoccupied land available for public use”,<sup>10</sup> but in addition the only structures—a row of commercial adobes—forming



*Fig. 5.7 – Gable-on-bip pyramidal cottage house type with a lowered roof vent and entry porch carved out of the square plan, Barrio Viejo, Tucson. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

the north edge of the plaza and facing into it thus had their backs turned to Congress Street, the primary thoroughfare between the railroad depot at the eastern end of town and the stage line to the west.<sup>11</sup> When Church Plaza devolved into the backyard of the booming commercial activities along Congress Street,<sup>12</sup> Bishop Salpointe decided not only to relocate, but to break with the past by building the new Saint Augustine in 1896 in Romanesque Revival style.

### Conclusion

By the final years preceding Arizona statehood in 1912, the transformation of Tucson's urban landscape from one that was primarily Hispanic to one that was identifiably American was complete. The universal adoption of building placement at the center of the lot, rejection of adobe, and popularity of formal eclecticism and revivalism reflect demographic and cultural assimilation. Many of the stylistic expressions seen throughout the Eastern United States (for instance, Queen

Anne and Neoclassical) and those invented in the southwestern United States (California Mission and Spanish Colonial Revivals) were present. The work of Henry Trost, an architect who moved to Tucson from Chicago in 1899, includes a Transformed Sonoran building with fluted columns, a Mission Revival mansion, a Neoclassical Scottish Rite (Masonic) Cathedral, Wrightian- or Prairie Style-inspired houses with Sullivanesque ornament, and a brilliant *homage* to San Xavier del Bac in the form of a fraternal clubhouse. The best examples are the 1898 Steinfeld Mansion, the 1902-3 Second Owl's Club (see map of El Presidio), and the Scottish Rite Cathedral.

Both the urban and architectural models from the period just after the arrival of the railroad, identified as either *Transformed Sonoran* or *Transitional*, include the best of both Hispanic and American cultures. Buildings were constructed of local materials. Labor and material costs were shared as houses formed rows. Each structure

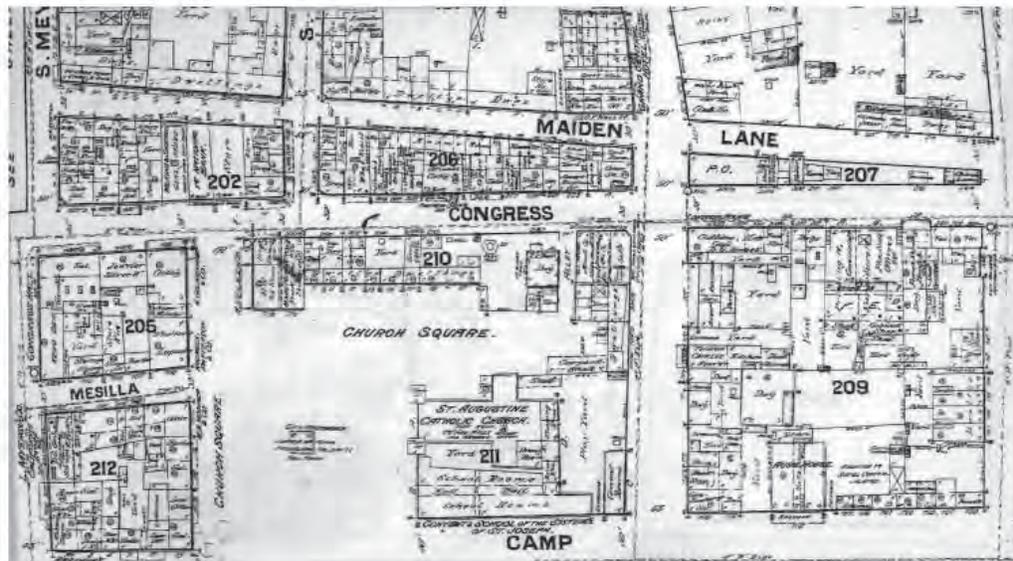


Fig. 5.8 – Sanborn Insurance Map, 1885. In this map detail, the Hispanic preference for street-abutting buildings with open space in the center of the small blocks and social plazas is evident. In addition, a written description of the function of each building illustrates the interwoven character of the urban fabric that included a variety of residential options and commercial and social services. The majority of the corner buildings were commercial activities such as 'bakery, grocery, butcher, saloon, etc.' while the residential types included, 'hotel, boarding house, dwelling, tenement, etc.' Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson

responded directly to the desert climate by providing insulation, shade, through ventilation, and micro-climates. Lighter materials were used for roofing, shade structures, windows or doors, and floors. Neighborhoods were comprehensible and walkable. The thick, solid walls of the row houses and shops lining the streets provided shade and acoustic insulation. Shops and services were integral with neighborhood houses. The distinction between the neighborhood fabric and civic structures was also apparent. The Territorial settlement pattern offered a rich social-spatial context, in which outdoor streets and plazas were the locus of society and commerce and courtyards provided cool micro-climates and private spaces.

#### ENDNOTES

1. Kevin Lynch, *What Time is This Place?* (Cambridge, Mass.: MIT Press, 1972), 55-57. This idea comes from Lynch via Nina Veregge (see following note). The relevant chapter in Lynch is "On the Presence of the Past" (pp. 29-64). Lynch advocates the identification of core values that may serve as points for discussion about preservation and new development.
2. Nina Veregge, "Transformations of Spanish Urban Landscape in the American Southwest, 1821-1900," *Journal of the Southwest* 35/4 (Winter 1993): 371-459.
3. Felipe Fernandez-Armesto, *The Americas: A Hemispheric History* (New York: The Modern Library, 2003), 5-6. The difficulty here is in the use of "American" to refer to the United States only.
4. Julian D. Hayden, *Excavations, 1940, at University Indian Ruin, Tucson, Arizona* (Tucson: National Park Service CCC, U. S. Department of the Interior, and the University of Arizona, 1957), 177-78 and 203. For example, Hohokam puddled adobe and lime plaster.
5. U. S. Bureau of the Census, *Federal Census – Territory of New Mexico and Territory of Arizona. Excerpts from the Decennial Federal Census, 1860, for Arizona County in the Territory of New Mexico*. This is the earliest census, and although it cannot be used to prove facts for the years

before 1860, it can suggest certain demographic trends to that point.

6. U. S. Bureau of the Census, *Federal Census – Territory of New Mexico and Territory of Arizona. Excerpts from the Decennial Federal Census, 1870, for the Territory of Arizona*. This census lists 5,809 persons as "foreign born" inhabitants of Arizona by place of birth—the largest group from Mexico (74.8%), followed by Great Britain and Ireland (11.8%), Germany (6.5%), 'British America' (2.4%), and France (1.18%), among the 20 countries listed. The "native" population is 3,849 from 35 states and 1,353 from 4 of the 12 territories, but does not distinguish Native Americans ("Papago" or "Pimas Altos") or ethnicity per se. The census categories were "white," "colored," and "foreign born".
7. These are approximate figures based on measurements taken from Sanborn Fire Maps.
8. Juan Gomez-Novy and Stefanos Polyzoides, "A Tale of Two Cities: The Failed Urban Renewal of Downtown Tucson in the Twentieth Century," *Journal of the Southwest* 45/1-2 (Spring/Summer 2003), 90.
9. In the 1980's these structures were called "Anglo-Territorial," "Anglo-Brick," or "American-Brick". These terms were probably one legacy of the attempt to brush aside, disguise, or eradicate Hispanic values beginning in the 1880s.
10. Abigail A. Van Slyck, "What the Bishop Learned: The Importance of Claiming Space at Tucson's Church Plaza," *Journal of Arizona History* 39/2 (Summer 1998), 131.
11. Sanborn Fire Map, 1883, and George Hand's Map of Tucson, 1870-1880.
12. Van Slyck, "What the Bishop Learned," 134.

4



---

# CATTLE RANCHING AND RANCH ARCHITECTURE IN SOUTHERN ARIZONA

Josephine Antoinette Hilliard  
and Matthew Sterner

**T**he cattle business like any other business has undergone many changes, especially in the last century. There were many phases through which the industry passed, the cattle kingdom, the cattle drives, open range, fenced range, the first railroads, water rights to the few streams, wells and windmills, and finally the modern truck. All this combined with the elements of nature, the heat, drought, diseases, wind and extreme cold to say nothing of cattle rustling and thieves, has given the cattleman his share of excitement and challenge. The cattleman's life has indeed painted a colorful chapter of American history. —Betty Accomazzo, *Arizona National Ranch Histories*, vol. II

European conquerors, missionaries, and settlers brought the first cattle to the New World. The climate and environment of Spain and Pimería Alta were sufficiently similar that animals and humans readily adapted. Since the Spanish and English were most successful in transplanting their cultures to the Americas, it was their cattle types and practices that most influenced New World cattle-raising. In Arizona these two influences met and blended in a particular historical pattern.<sup>1</sup> Jay J. Wagoner notes that the extension of the Mexican *encomienda* system<sup>2</sup> into northern New Spain was made possible by the introduction of cattle and horses.<sup>3</sup>

The arrival of Father Eusebio Francisco Kino into the Pimería Alta in 1691 heralded the beginning of historic ranching in Arizona.<sup>4</sup> Kino developed a stock ranch at the mission of Nuestra Señora de los Dolores in present-day Sonora, which by 1700 was furnishing herds for the *cabeceras* and *visitas* that Kino established (see John Messina's essay). Kino's visits to Piman ranches were more than journeys seeking converts. At many of the *rancherías* Kino left herds of cattle and horses to establish the beginnings of stock ranches.<sup>5</sup> Wagoner notes the irony of the introduction of the horse:

it made possible the Apache raiding system that later became the scourge of ranching and farming communities throughout southern Arizona.<sup>6</sup> Although the mission system temporarily faltered with the death of Kino in 1711, the mission settlements he founded continued their ranching and agricultural practices.

Agricultural communities were also established around the presidios that were built by the Spanish in the eighteenth century. Although few sources specifically mention the agricultural efforts of the presidios, it is obvious that ranching and farming were essential to the existence of these outposts. Some supplies were sent from Mexico, but these were most often restricted to weapons, personnel, and official communications. Livestock was imported to the presidios from Mexico but deliveries were too sporadic to sustain post personnel. The colonization of Alta California, north of the present U.S.-Mexico border, was greatly enhanced by the ability of Arizona ranches to supply beef cattle. The native Yuman uprising of 1781 affected the growing cattle industry by ending the supply of livestock to California.<sup>7</sup>

## Mexican Ranching and Farming

The Mexican war of independence (1821) brought the development of great haciendas based on Spanish land grants originally made for the purpose of mining (fig. 4.1). In the Santa Cruz watershed, Tomas and Ignacio Ortiz obtained two grants from the governor of Sinaloa and Sonora, at Canoa and Arivaca respectively, for the purpose of raising cattle and horses. To the south at Buenavista (just north of the present international boundary) was the ranch of the Toveras. Other large grants include San Rafael de la Sanja of the Romeros and San Jose de Sonoita. Along the San Pedro River and its tributaries lay the vast lands of the Elias family, including San Ignacio del Babocomari,

Agua Prieta, and the San Juan de las Boquillas y Nogales grants. The Elias family also grazed cattle on the Los Nogales de Elias grant in the Santa Cruz Valley.<sup>8</sup> The Babocomari ranch was described in 1851 as the largest in Sonora, with over 40,000 head of cattle grazing its ranges.<sup>9</sup> The San Bernardino ranch occupied land in southern Arizona and Sonora. The land was obtained by grant in 1822 specifically in order to create a buffer against the Apaches but the ranch was abandoned already by the 1830s.

Secularization of the mission system enabled some individuals to purchase more land. When Mexican President Santa Anna declared that temporal lands be sold, Don Francisco Alenadro Aguilar, the brother-in-law of Sonora governor Manuel Gandara, purchased the Calabasas, Guevavi, and Potrero mission lands at auction.<sup>10</sup> The Mexican expansion of the early 19th century thus enabled the re-occupation of eighteenth-century mission and *visita* lands. Like the Spanish before them, Mexican ranchers were driven out by constant threat of Apache raids. According to Wagoner, the decade of the 1820s was reasonably peaceful.<sup>11</sup> By the 1830s, however, raiding had been stepped up and no petitions for land grants were filed after 1831. Abandoned cattle reverted to a wild state and were scattered or killed by Apaches. Wild cattle were systematically exploited by Mexican hunters who sold the tough beef to military personnel.<sup>12</sup>

The California gold rush created new demand for beef to supply the increasing number of miners. Cattle from the east were driven over the southern route to California despite the continuing threat of Apache attack. Many footsore and skinny animals were abandoned along the way, but thousands of cattle finally reached California. So many cattle reached the California markets that by 1855 the price of beef had fallen to \$6 or \$7 per head from the \$300 to \$500 per head price of 1848.<sup>13</sup>

## American Ranching and Farming

When the Gadsden Purchase of 1853 transferred rich mineral deposits and excellent grazing lands into United States hands, interest in southern Arizona revived. The establishment of forts in the 1850s brought a semblance of protection to local residents and small ranches and farms began to expand in the Sonoita Valley and along the Santa Cruz and San Pedro River valleys. Fritz Contzen was a German immigrant who served in the Texas Rangers and joined Major W. H. Emory's party surveying the boundary estab-

lished by the Gadsden Purchase treaty. Contzen elected to stay in Arizona and established Rancho Punta de Agua south of San Xavier in 1855. Sometime between 1854 and 1856, he opened the San Xavier mine southwest of the ranch. The ranch was also a stop on the Guaymas to Tucson stage route. Following a devastating Apache raid, Contzen stopped ranching and made a living buying horses and feed from the Tohono O'odham and selling it in turn to the Butterfield Overland Mail. Rancho Punta de Agua was later acquired by the Elias family. The Gila Apache raid that helped spark the infamous massacre of Aravaipa

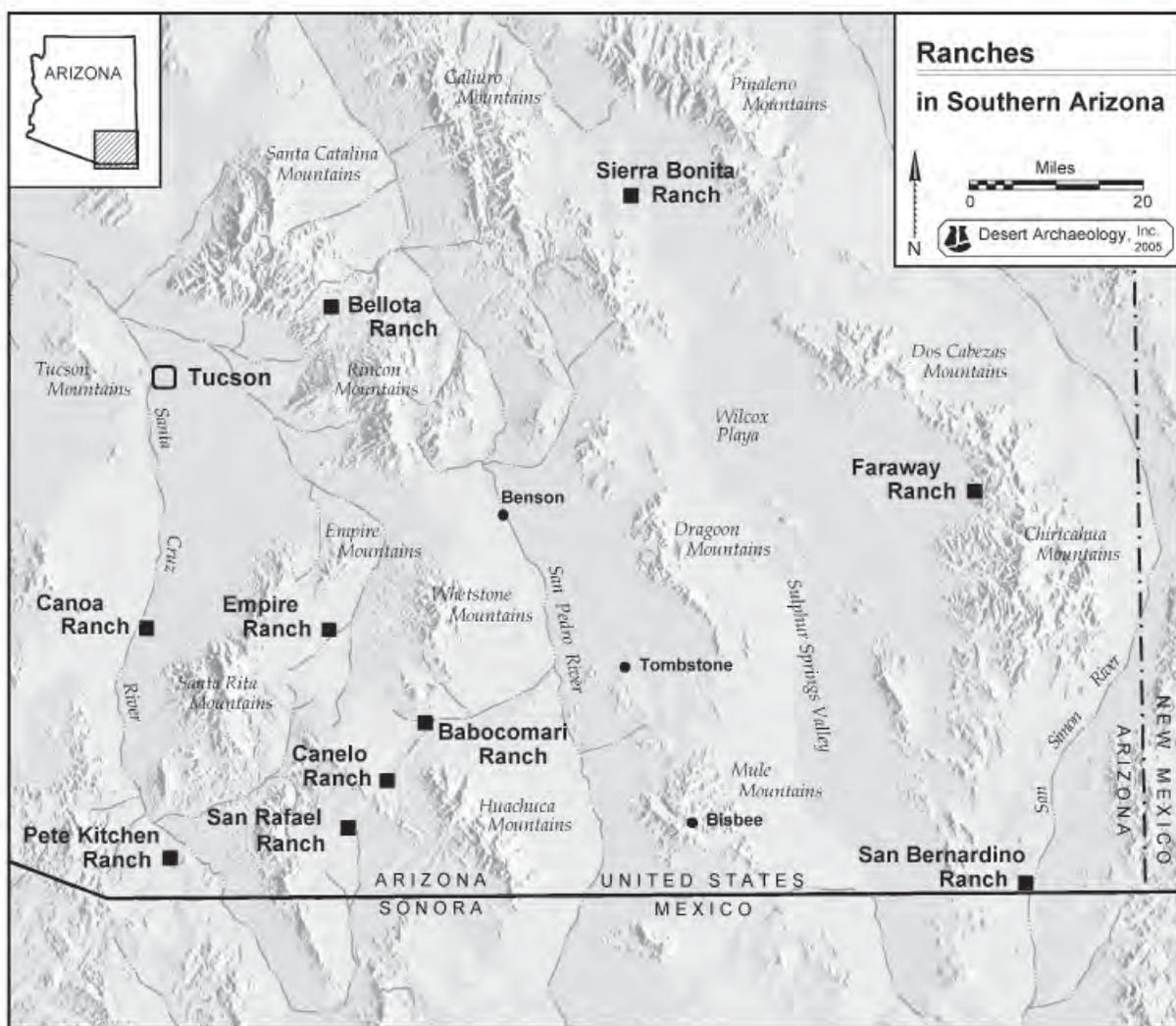


Fig. 4.1 - Map of major ranches in southern Arizona. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology Inc.

Apache at Camp Grant was made on the Punta de Agua ranch. The ranch apparently was included in the San Xavier Reservation created in 1874 but was abandoned in 1877.<sup>14</sup>

William Oury was also one of the many new immigrants into the area who established a ranch along the Santa Cruz River during the 1850s. Oury came to Arizona in 1856 by way of Texas, where he fought first in the battle of the Alamo before it fell to Santa Anna and later in the battle of San Jacinto.<sup>15</sup> After a failed excursion to the California gold fields, Oury settled in Tucson. He was one of the first to import fine-breed cattle into Arizona.<sup>16</sup> Constant theft and killing of the stock by marauding Apaches, however, forced Oury to abandon his ranch and try his hand at a more urban enterprise, as well as at local politics.<sup>17</sup>

Another pioneer of the 1850s was Pete Kitchen. Kitchen came from Kentucky to pursue ranching and farming in Arizona and established a large operation just north of the Gadsden Purchase boundary in southern New Mexico Territory. W. C. Eaton identifies Kitchen as one of the first large-scale ranchers to provide produce and meat across the entire territory.<sup>18</sup> Kitchen first occupied the Canoa Ranch between 1855 and 1862 and later the Potrero Ranch near Nogales, which he fortified against Apache attacks. As Apache raids increased throughout the territory during the Civil War years, Kitchen's ranch was the only place to afford even a semblance of security in an otherwise hostile environment. He tenaciously hung on, even though the Apaches killed his employees, stole his stock, and shot his pigs with arrows.<sup>19</sup>

Early ranches were held by right of first occupation: a rancher secured the claim by earliest settlement or by purchasing such right from a preceding occupant.<sup>20</sup> Claims could be "jumped" if ranches were left unattended. Because most of the territory was open range, branding of live-

stock was necessary. Brands were registered with the Livestock Sanitary Board. By 1870, there were only slightly more than 5,000 cattle in all of Arizona Territory. Prices of agricultural products and beef were high. Most of the cattle were driven to the military posts and reservations from Texas, California, Oregon, and Idaho.<sup>21</sup>

It was the final subjugation of the Apaches following Geronimo's surrender in 1886 that brought ranching back to the territory. There was a great expansion in cattle ranching between 1876 and 1880. According to Patricia Stein, the numbers of cattle grew as a direct function of the demand for beef by the military posts, most of which had sprung up in response to the Apache depredations of the 1870s.<sup>22</sup> Supplying the forts became a lucrative enterprise for ranchers and freighters, who were known to be seldom above defrauding the military. The first permanent ranch for cattle raising in Arizona was that of Colonel Henry C. Hooker, founded in 1872. Hooker's ranch furnished the army with beef for many years. In 1876, Canadian-born Walter L. Vail and Englishman H.R. Hislop began to acquire ranch land in the Empire Mountain area, which eventually grew into the Empire Land and Cattle Company (Empire Ranch). Acquisitions by the company between 1876 and 1890 included land in what are now Pima, Santa Cruz, and Cochise counties.<sup>23</sup> Except for a large herd of Texas cattle on Hooker's Sierra Bonita Ranch near Willcox, most cattle in Arizona territory were Mexican cattle in small herds handled by Mexican *vaqueros*.

The linking of Arizona Territory to the rest of the country by rail, beginning in 1880, meant that cattle could be imported from Texas and elsewhere in ever larger numbers and without the undesirable effects to the animals typically associated with long drives. Grazing was essentially unregulated at this time. Mortality among cattle was high, and a drop in beef prices added

to the disaster. The cruelest blow dealt to Arizona ranchers was the increase of 25 percent in the railroad tariff in 1890. In protest against what they perceived to be price gouging, southern Arizona cattlemen boycotted the railroad and returned to overland drives.<sup>24</sup>

Despite the overgrazing of the rangelands and the railroad tariffs, a period of unprecedented growth along the Santa Cruz River followed the arrival of the railroad. Settlement spread far north and south of the growing urban center of Tucson, and into the Avra Valley to the west. Farming and ranching became the predominant activities in these rural areas. By 1885, cattle were being exported to California. Cattlemen weathered droughts and other unfavorable conditions, but prices were maintained. The greatest and most noticeable improvements in the herds came in the 1880s with the introduction of Herefords, which were found to be most suitable for arid climate.<sup>25</sup> Among the early breeders were Colin Cameron of the San Rafael Ranch and Colonel Hooker. Further improvements to cattle were consistently made through systematic breeding and culling. As a result, the livestock industry flourished during the 1890s cattle production in Arizona peaking in 1891 with 720,000 head of cattle.<sup>26</sup>

During the twentieth century, simple open-range ranching that had prevailed for two centuries in southern Arizona was replaced by a complicated business enterprise whose higher production costs required greater capital investment. Although cattlemen profited from the World War I boom and by 1920 the urban development of California was creating an important new market for Arizona beef, some of the large ranches began to dissolve. The industry recovered after a general agricultural depression in 1920–1921, but overproduction combined with the effects of the depression forced the sale of many large ranch holdings. The Chiricahua Cattle Company bought the Empire Ranch in 1928 and sold

off portions of it in subsequent years.<sup>27</sup> The nationwide drought of 1934 dealt a devastating blow to the Arizona cattle industry. Arizona was declared a drought state and the Drought Relief Program provided reasonable prices for beef as well as an opportunity to cull herds. When the drought finally ended, the cattle industry recovered fairly quickly. The Arizona Livestock Production Credit Association provided loans to stockmen and many of them participated in the Soil Conservation Range Benefit Program designed to encourage range improvement and regeneration.<sup>28</sup>

## Development of the Vernacular Landscape

In 1870 Raphael Pumpelly wrote that most ranches were located near rivers for ease of obtaining water with temporary adobe huts serving as houses.<sup>29</sup> The Santa Cruz Valley was the center of the first American occupation. By 1880, most of the old Mexican ranch sites had been reestablished. To the west were isolated ranches along the Arivaca Creek, the adjacent mesa lands and foothills having been mostly untouched before 1880.

The second general area of occupation was east of the Santa Rita Mountains—a broad rolling tract of land bounded by the Sierra Colorada (Empire Mountains) on the north, the Whetstone Mountains on the east, and the Patagonia and Huachuca chains on the south. While possessing few streams, there was permanent water at the base of the Santa Rita Mountains. It was here in 1880 the Empire Ranch grazed over 5,000 cattle and the Cienega Ranch about 1,000 head along with 23,000 sheep.<sup>30</sup> Edward Vail described the Cienega region around Pantano as being a succession of meadows thickly covered with sacaton and salt grass, while the valleys of the Sonoita and the Babocomari had natural reservoirs. By 1880 the San Pedro Valley had scattered herds from

Sonora to the Gila River. Two large ranches were those of John H. Slaughter at Mule Pass and the Babocomari Ranch on the tributary of the same name. Slaughter was to later purchase the San Bernardino Mexican land grant on the Arizona-Sonora border, east of present-day Douglas.

The Sulphur Springs Valley west of the Dos Cabezas and Chiricahua Mountains was a third center of settlement (fig. 4.2). The valley, measuring about 20 miles wide and 50 to 60 miles long, was known as “Playa de los Pimas” in Spanish records. It was here in 1872 that Colonel Hooker established the Sierra Bonita Ranch on rolling valley and mesa land.

The deterioration of Arizona’s ranges was contemporaneous with the development of ranching as an industry. The primary objective of cattlemen up to 1885 was large herds; overstocking was the inevitable result of unrestricted use of

the federal range for grazing purposes. Combined with such practices as the deliberate burning of riparian brush and cropping of natural grasses for hay, unregulated grazing had the net effect of the destruction of range grass and increased runoff, resulting in severe erosion of the land and an extension of the dry season. The severe summer drought of 1885 resulted in a high mortality among cattle.<sup>31</sup> Two effects of the 1880s depression on the cattle industry were the consolidation of small holdings into large cattle companies and the development of artificial water sources. The Tombstone Land and Cattle Company, the Arivaca Land and Cattle Company, and the Sierra Bonita Land and Cattle Company were three of the larger consolidated companies in southern Arizona. Wells were dug, natural tanks enhanced, and water from springs was piped to bring water closer to the grasslands.<sup>32</sup>



*Fig. 4.2 - Sulphur Springs Valley, typical of the basin and range geography of southeastern Arizona that made cattle ranching a viable enterprise. Courtesy of Bob Sharp*



Fig. 4.3 – Ranch environments are composed of a variety of individual features, from ranch houses and barns to corrals and windmills. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery.

## The Evolution of Ranch Architecture

Ranches are true vernacular landscapes incorporating a variety of building types and features in a holistic environment associated with the ranching enterprise (fig. 4.3). It is the land itself that unifies the environment, defining a cultural as well as physical landscape unique to this region and the historical traditions that created it. The architecture of the ranch was influenced by the culture of the builder and by the time and place of the construction. In southern Arizona the influences were primarily those of the Spanish colonists and, following the Civil War, of the Anglo-Americans.<sup>55</sup>

The dominant forms of the Spanish colonial ranch can be traced back to Spain. The characteristics of style and building methods employed in Andalusia and neighboring areas were easily transported to regions of Nueva España similar in terrain and climate. The land and resources determined the type of structures that developed on the northern frontier. Clay and mud became the principal building materials, the length of available wooden roof beams determined room scale, and the climate and the needs of defense controlled the style and type of wall openings.

The model ranch environment is derived from the *hacienda* that the Spanish brought to the New World. By the end of the Mexican period the hacienda had become part of the vernacular architecture of the region. On a hacienda, the main house served as the focal point and other buildings—the chapel, a school, storehouses, workshops, corrals, and bunkhouses for ranch personnel—spread out around it like a small town. The ranch house served as the primary residence of the ranch owner and often served as the business office or ranch headquarters. The Sonoran hacienda ranch house repeated the massing and geometric simplicity of earlier Spanish and Mexican houses, with a flat roof constructed of wood (*vigas* and *latillas*) and mud, a central *zaguán*, and small windows with grillwork.

Within the hacienda model of a self-contained community, bunkhouses often mimicked ranch house buildings, although they were typically simpler in form and construction. Corrals, barns and storage sheds, specialized structures for the management of the cattle, were utilitarian in character and typically built for longevity with simple, locally available materials, primarily wood and adobe. Windmills are also a prominent feature on the ranch landscape, providing power to pump

water in isolated areas. The water is often stored in large water tanks and then distributed for domestic, animal and agricultural use.<sup>34</sup>

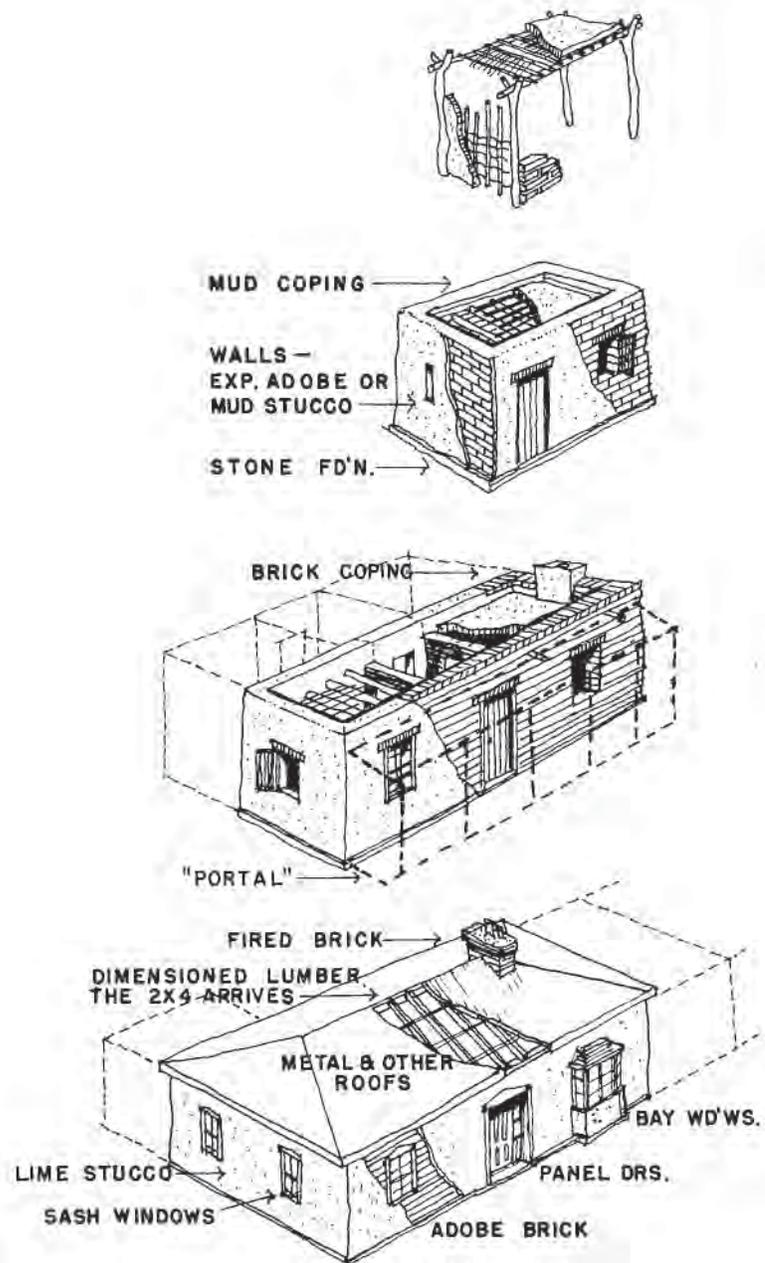
Finally, fences are one of the character-defining features of a ranch landscape, used to demarcate a boundary and to limit movement (fig. 4.4). The presence of fencing on ranches distinguishes the later period of ranching from the early Spanish, Mexican, and pioneer American periods; earlier cattle were left to graze on the open range without fencing. The most common fence is the barbed wire fence, with the wire strung between metal or wooden poles. Other fencing materials include logs, exhibiting an abundance of available wood, in which planks in various lengths are laid on top of one another between two vertical log posts.<sup>35</sup>



*Fig. 4.4 – Fence, Canoa Ranch. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

### Early American Ranches in the Spanish/Mexican Tradition

Early American ranchers adopted many of the features of Spanish/Mexican building traditions, perhaps out of convenience or necessity. Adobe was the most common building material (fig. 4.5). There are many ranches displaying traditional Spanish/Mexican building forms, including the Babocomari Ranch (1887), the Bellota Ranch (1890), the Pete Kitchen Ranch (1867), the Tanque Verde Ranch (1870), and the Sierra Bonita Ranch (1872).



*Fig. 4.5 – The southern Arizona ranch house can trace its origins to the Spanish-Mexican temporary shelter, or jacal, followed by the introduction of adobe walls and wood ceilings in the Sonoran vernacular tradition, then expanding to a larger plan and incorporating American building forms, construction systems, and materials. Drawing by Gordon Heck, courtesy of the Arizona Architectural Archives, CALA, University of Arizona.*

### Pete Kitchen Ranch (1867)

Pete Kitchen began the building of the adobe ranch house in the upper Santa Cruz Valley in 1867. The valley was a principal trail for marauders headed for Mexico. Kitchen needed to create a place that could offer protection to his family, ranch hands, cattle, and hogs.

Of Spanish-Mexican frontier style, the ranch house was built on a hill overlooking a thousand acres of agricultural land (fig. 4.6). The homestead consisted of four rooms, of which three were contiguous along a north-south axis and the fourth projecting westward from the north end of the house. The walls of the ranch house were twenty-one inches thick providing a good defense against attack. Only the south and central rooms had windows. Floors were of packed earth. The roof was flat with a surrounding parapet three to four feet in height, again offering protection from attacks and also as an outdoor sleeping area.

To the west of the house was a patio formed by the “L” and a wall enclosing a small amount of land. Within the patio was a sixty-foot deep

well. Outbuildings were located outside the patio wall: an adobe bunkhouse, smokehouses, vats for rendering lard, corrals to prevent the beef cattle, horses, and mules from being stampeded during Apache raids, and a commissary where employees could draw supplies.

Kitchen sold the ranch in 1883. Numerous alterations have been made since. The greatest change came with additions in 1947. An “L” was added to the northeast to balance the original westward extension. At the same time the southern end of the house was expanded and a long covered porch, or portal, with tiled roof and floor, was added along the eastern façade.

### Sierra Bonita Ranch (1872)

On Henry Clay Hooker’s 250,000-acre Sierra Bonita Ranch, begun in 1872, was a fully articulated hacienda, elegantly furnished and equipped with modern conveniences but also designed to endure a long siege. The house was U-shaped and built around a long, rectangular courtyard, or patio, with the fourth side was defined by a

*Fig. 4.6 – Pete Kitchen Ranch (Portrero Homestead), 1915, illustrating the Spanish-Mexican building forms transformed to incorporate American building traditions. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 5646).*





*Fig. 4.7—San Rafael ranch house. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 52661)*

wall beyond which stood numerous outbuildings. Consideration was given to the fact the Sulphur Springs Valley location lay on a trail to Mexico used by the White Mountain and other Apache groups. As a result, the exterior walls of the ranch house were sixteen feet high and twenty inches thick. As a means of defense a parapet surrounded the roofs of the three room blocks. Additionally, according to family tradition, the original openings all faced the patio with access from the outside provided by a gate in the wall of the courtyard. A *portal* circled three sides of the patio shielding the windows and offering shade. Within the courtyard were a well, windmill, water storage tank, and root cellar. Inside, the house was spacious with each major room having its own fireplace.

Beyond the patio lay a stable, workroom, and storage areas. The stable included skylights, as well as doors opening to the courtyard. Space was provided for the carriages, seventeen horses, box stalls for the stallions, and a tack room.<sup>56</sup> A large adobe corral, reportedly capable of holding three thousand head of cattle, was located southwest of the main house. Other corrals, made of adobe and plank wood, held horses. Near the

enclosures was a rarity: a barn built mostly of wood, with a gable roof. To the north stood a large adobe corral for storing hay. There were also paddocks, a gristmill, blacksmith's shop, a large slaughterhouse, quarters for forty-odd ranch hands, and a half-mile horse track. There were large kitchen gardens irrigated by two wells and an *acequia* running across the valley. Two large ponds were built to water the herds.

### Later American Ranches in the “American” Style

It was not until the flood of American settlers after the Civil War that any marked change in southern Arizona ranch architecture occurred. With the arrival of the Southern Pacific Railroad by the 1880s, new building materials and implements could be imported. The availability of brick and dimensioned lumber allowed ranches to ignore local traditions and build “American” styled buildings.

#### San Rafael Ranch (1900)

The ranch house of the 600,000-acre San Rafael Ranch shows the break from the Spanish-

Mexican tradition most clearly (fig. 4.7). Built for Colin Cameron in 1900 as primarily a stand-alone building, it exhibits West Indies and French colonial origins. This headquarters house, the fourth one built on the ranch, was described at the time of its construction as “the finest ranch house ever seen on a cattle ranch.”<sup>57</sup>

The exterior showed a strong French colonial influence. Bricks for the exterior walls were fired in kilns built on the property, while the exterior doors and trim were of California redwood. The house is three stories tall, with a full basement elevating the main floor, a dominating hip roof, and a wide veranda wrapping around the entire ground floor. The ranch house served dual-purposes—ranch headquarters in the basement and family dwelling above. Entrance was at the east end, opening onto a long hall. Family life centered on the central hall-living room.

In 1909, Cameron sold the ranch to William C. Greene, the copper magnate with mine holdings in Cananea, Mexico. The house became simply a ranch headquarters building. Most of the outbuildings were leveled, leaving only the barn and machine shop. The ranch is now part of the Arizona State Parks system but is not presently open to the public.

## Later American Ranches: Hybrid Forms

As was the case with residential construction in urban areas, between the poles of the different architectural idioms described above were a number of hybrid forms that often combined adobe wall construction with hipped roofs that extended over the walls as porches. These hybrids are sometimes referred to as “Territorial” in style, but they are more precisely styles in flux, as many of the ranchers had roots in other places and adapted the traditions they inherited with those of southern Arizona. Examples of these

hybrids include the Faraway Ranch (1888) and the San Bernardino Ranch (1887-88). Ranches such as Canoa (1876) and Empire (1876) evolved over time and reflect the changing architectural forms and stylistic elements of various periods in ranch architecture.<sup>58</sup> For detailed discussions of Empire Ranch and Canoa Ranch, see the tour site descriptions.

### Faraway Ranch (1888)

Influenced by the arrival of the railroad, the late 1880s saw a developing breakdown of regional style in southern Arizona ranch architecture. A prime example is the Faraway Ranch near Dos Cabezas, southwest of Willcox in the Chiricahua Mountains. Faraway Ranch is a bridge between Spanish-Mexican and 19th century Anglo styles, containing elements of both.

Its ranch house was the first country residence in southern Arizona to have more than a single story. Within it, owner Neil Erickson’s skill as a carpenter and craftsman and the influence of Eastern pattern books and building manuals are apparent in many details. Since dimensioned lumber was now available, wooden door jambs, window sashes, window sills, and cabinetwork were crafted in a fashion reminiscent of those in Eastern dwellings.

The ranch is an historical district within the Chiricahua National Monument.

### San Bernardino Ranch (1887-1888)

The original land grant of the San Bernardino Ranch awarded to Lieutenant Ignacio Pérez spanned the present international border, encompassing 75,000 acres in Cochise County (Arizona) and northeastern portion of Sonora (Mexico). A home and ranch headquarters covered two to three acres, occupying the former site of a Spanish presidio.<sup>59</sup> Slaughter bought 65,000 acres of the San Bernardino land grant in 1886. Soon afterwards he erected a small adobe house with

adjoining stables and outbuildings. The following year these structures were destroyed in an earthquake felt throughout northern Sonora. The new building complex was built on a rise overlooking the valley (fig. 4.8).

San Bernardino with its massive roof, broad verandas, and interior spaciousness reflects Slaughter's Louisiana and southern Texas background. A cedar shake roof and a porch that wound around the west, south, and east sides dominated the new main building. The posts were of milled lumber, most likely ordered from a mail-order catalogue. The front door, facing west, opened onto a five-foot wide hallway, which ran the length of the house and divided it into north and south sections, not unlike the "dog-run" houses of Texas. The northern section was the longest with the kitchen at the far end. The Slaughter Ranch was not as defensive as earlier

ranch complexes. The Apache wars had ended in 1886, although problems with bandits remained. All the rooms except the pantry contained windows. Doors in the kitchen and at both ends of the hallway opened to the outside.

On the west side behind the house could be found a small stone building for vegetables, meat, and cheeses. Beside it was a stone commissary and general store, and beyond it an adobe bunkhouse for the Mexican ranch hands and quarters for the Chinese cook.<sup>40</sup> Nearby was a "dog-run" plan schoolhouse, each section having its own chimney. Beyond these immediate structures were barns and granaries, workshops, a blacksmith's shop, and post office. The ranch included six hundred acres of farmland with ten artesian wells and a large pond, or stock tank. It was a self-contained community.



*Fig. 4.8 –San Bernardino ranch house. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 5805)*

Evidence of the schoolhouse and some of the farther outbuildings no longer exists. The rest remain fairly well intact. The ranch is currently operated as the Johnson Historical Museum of the Southwest and the San Bernardino National Wildlife Refuge.

## Conclusion

Ranch houses were called home by some of the wealthiest and most prominent Arizonans of the late 19th century. They illustrate an unbroken evolutionary chain from the Spanish-Mexican vernacular to the architect-designed ranch house. Between the ranch house that Pete Kitchen built on Potrero Creek in 1867 and the 1935 “Big House” at Canoa (see the tour site description) there existed a world of difference in comfort, security, and refinement.

Cattle ranching spans three hundred years of Arizona history. The sites discussed here reflect only the last half of the period. The large ranches are disappearing. Of the seven described, five are now in public ownership. Pima County holds three additional ranches and is in the process of acquiring another from the City of Tucson.

As unique combinations of vernacular architecture and the landscape which that architecture colonized, ranches have played a critical role in the evolution of cultural identity in southern Arizona and in the Southwest generally.

## ENDNOTES

1. Most of the information in this section was obtained from J. J. Wagoner, “History of the Cattle Industry in Southern Arizona, 1540-1940,” *University of Arizona Bulletin: Social Science Bulletin* 23/2 (1952), and William Collins, “Cattle Ranching in Arizona, 1540-1950,” National Register of Historic Places Multiple Property Documentation, unpublished draft (Phoenix: Arizona State Historic Preservation Office, 2002).

2. The *encomienda* system entailed tributary labor that was required of native populations to their Spanish overlords.

3. Wagoner, “History of the Cattle Industry,” 5-7.

4. Herbert E. Bolton, *The Padre on Horseback: A Sketch of Eusebio Francisco Kino* (San Francisco: Sonoran Press, 1932), 64.

5. Idem, *Kino’s Historical Memoir of Pimeria Alta, 1683–1711*, vol. 2 (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1948).

6. Wagoner, “History of the Cattle Industry,” 7.

7 Ibid., 22.

8. See Henry P. Walker and Don Bufkin, *Historic Atlas of Arizona* (Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1986), 15, for a comprehensive map of Spanish and Mexican land grants.

9. Wagoner, “History of the Cattle Industry,” 25.

10. Bernard L. Fontana, *Calabasas of the Rio Rico* (The Smoke Signal, 1971), 76, and Wagoner, “History of the Cattle Industry in Southern Arizona, 1540-1940,” 26.

11. Wagoner, “History of the Cattle Industry,” 27.

12. Idem, “Overstocking of the Ranges in Southern Arizona during the 1870s and 1880s,” *Arizoniana* (1961), 28.

13. Wagoner, “History of the Cattle Industry,” 30.

14. Randall H. McGuire, *Rancho Punta de Agua* (Tucson: Arizona State Museum Contribution to Highway Salvage Archaeology No. 45, 1979), 5–10.

15. Richard S. Ciolek-Torrello and Jeffrey A. Homburg, *Cultural Resources Surveys and Overviews of the Rillito River Drainage Area, Pima County, Arizona* (Tucson: Statistical Research, Inc., 1990), 124.

16. Wagoner, “History of the Cattle Industry,” 34.

17. Ciolek-Torrello and Homburg, *Cultural Resources Surveys and Overviews of the Rillito River Drainage Area*, 124.

18. W. C. Eaton, “Frontier Life in Southern Arizona 1858–1861,” *Southwestern Historical Quarterly* (1933).

19. Jay J. Wagoner, *Early Arizona: Prehistory to Civil War* (Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1975), 169, 468.

20. Patricia Stein, "Historical Resources of the Northern Tucson Basin," in *The Northern Tucson Basin Survey: Research Direction and Background Studies*, ed. John H. Madsen, Paul R. Fish, and Suzanne K. Fish (Tucson: Arizona State Museum Archaeological Series 182, 1993), 36.
21. Wagoner, "History of the Cattle Industry," 36–37.
22. Stein, "Historical Resources of the Northern Tucson Basin," 36.
23. Bert Haskett, "Early History of the Cattle Ranching Industry in Arizona," *Arizona Historical Review* (1935), and Bruce A. Jones and Richard Ciolek-Torrello, *Caverns, Quarries, and Campsites: Land Use among the Prehistoric and Historic Occupants of Colossal Cave Preservation Park, Pima County, Arizona* (Tucson: Statistical Research, Inc., 1991), 46.
24. Wagoner, "History of the Cattle Industry," 41–46.
25. *Ibid.*, 50.
26. Jones and Ciolek-Torrello, *Caverns, Quarries, and Campsites*, 46.
27. *Ibid.*, 47.
28. Wagoner, "History of the Cattle Industry," 56–62.
29. Raphael Pumpelly, *Across America and Asia* (New York: Leypolt and Holt, 1870), 7; quoted in Wagoner, "History of the Cattle Industry," 32.
30. Gordon, 10th Census, 95; quoted in Wagoner, "History of the Cattle Industry," 41.
31. With drastic losses facing them, a group of cattlemen headed by Dan Ming met at Willcox to prey for rain as a general air of discouragement fell upon the territory. Will C. Barnes, "Cowpunching Forty Years Ago," (address before the Twenty-fifth Annual Convention of the Arizona Cattle Growers' Association), *Weekly Market Report and News Letter*, 10/6 (February 10, 1931); quoted in Wagoner, "History of the Cattle Industry," 45.
32. Wagoner, "History of the Cattle Industry," 47–48.
33. Most of the information in this section was obtained from Janet Stewart, *Arizona Ranch Houses: Southern Territorial Styles, 1867-1900*, Historical Monograph 2, ed. John Bret Harte (Tucson: The Arizona Historical Society, 1974).
34. Collins, "Cattle Ranching in Arizona," 84, 88.
35. *Ibid.*, 86-87.
36. Jessie P. Hooker, letter to Stewart (February 3, 1969); quoted in Stewart, *Arizona Ranch Houses*, 37.
37. *The Arizona Republican* (November 10, 1900).
38. Collins, "Cattle Ranching in Arizona," 72.
39. Rex C. Gerald, *Spanish Presidios of the Late Eighteenth Century* (Santa Fe: Museum of New Mexico, 1968), 14, 21, drawing on 29; quoted in Stewart, *Arizona Ranch Houses*, 65.
40. Ben Williams, letter to Stewart (July 23, 1968), quoted in Stewart, *Arizona Ranch Houses*, 71.

5



---

# MINING AND MINING TOWNS IN SOUTHERN ARIZONA

James E. Ayres  
and Janet H. Parkhurst

**A**t the time of the Gadsden Purchase in 1853-1854, mining was quickly becoming a major part of economic activity in the newly acquired part of Arizona south of the Gila River (fig. 5.1). Mining had a long history in the area beginning in the Spanish period and valuable minerals became an increasing draw for enterprising individuals who wanted to “strike it rich.”

One of the earliest silver bonanzas discovered was at Arizonac in northern Sonora near the present town of Nogales in 1736. Large slabs or chunks of silver were found on or near the surface. This fortuitous find was an impetus to other prospecting activities and mine development throughout the region.<sup>1</sup>

In 1783, a Spanish Royal Ordinance promulgated changes to the 1584 Royal Ordinance that had set out rules for mining in the New World. Among other provisions, the 1783 rules required the posting of a mining claim notice, a practice continued in the U.S. mining law of 1872, which is still in force today.<sup>2</sup>

Several areas of southern Arizona were mined, often sporadically, during the 1700s. Among these were locations in the Santa Rita Mountains south of Tucson; the Guevavi area near Nogales, Arizona; and the Arivaca area southwest of Tucson. These mineral-rich sites were actively exploited before the Pima Revolt of 1751, but the precise locations of most of the mines is currently unknown. Most evidence of this early, small-scale mining effort was undoubtedly destroyed by later mining.<sup>3</sup>

The 1751 revolt by the indigenous population against the Spaniards led to a slow-down in mining activity in southern Arizona. Sporadic mining activities resumed in the 1760s and 1770s, although there was probably some prospecting and ore removal continuing from the 1750s. After the mid-1760s, Apache raiding parties increasingly



Fig. 5.1 – Mining Towns in Southern Arizona. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology Inc.

hindered mining at sites away from the centers of population. Placer deposits also were exploited during the eighteenth century. Quijotoa and the Babocomarí Valley, now the Altar Valley, were being mined in 1774 and 1777, respectively.<sup>4</sup>

In the early years of the 19th century, efforts were rekindled at many of the productive 18th-century mines. With the demise of the Spanish government in Mexico and the birth of the Mexican Republic in 1821, however, mining in what is now southern Arizona seems to have nearly ceased. There are several reasons for this state of affairs, including the near disintegration of the Mexican national government after 1821, increased Apache raids, and related difficulties with supply and communications from the south.<sup>5</sup>

During the 1840s, a few military and government-sponsored expeditions from the United States passed through what later became the Gadsden Purchase. For the first time, Americans

obtained an in-depth overview of northern Sonora, its people, mineral resources, economy, and problems. In 1848, the California gold rush caught the world's attention, and, not surprisingly, what is now southern Arizona became a preferred route to the gold fields for many easterners and southerners.<sup>6</sup>

In 1853 and 1854, the Gadsden Purchase Treaty was negotiated and ratified between the United States and Mexico. The United States acquired 29,640 square miles south of the Gila River in this transaction. With this important acquisition came renewed interest in the mineral resources of the region. Even before negotiations for the Purchase were concluded, a few adventuresome souls had moved into the area from the United States in search of silver and gold.

After the Purchase was concluded, two important parties of explorers arrived, both from California. One, the Arizona Mining and Trading Company,

was organized in 1854; the other, the Sonora Exploring and Mining Company, was created in 1856. These companies represented the first organized American mining enterprise in the Purchase. The lack of water, the costs of shipping ore to be processed, and ultimately the low quality of the ore brought an end to these mining operations.<sup>7</sup>

The late 1850s was a boom period for mine exploration and development, but the Civil War brought this exuberance to a quick end. With most of the U.S. Army moving east, the Apache were able to increase their raids. Ultimately, many of southern Arizona's mines, ranches, and small communities had to be abandoned because of them.

In 1863, the Territory of Arizona was organized, and new rules for mining were created by the legislature. Many of these rules resembled those of the Spanish Royal Ordinance of 1783. In 1864, the Cerro Colorado Mining District, the first of its kind in southern Arizona, was created.<sup>8</sup> When the first federal law relating to mining was passed in 1866, Arizona replaced its 1864 law with a revised law shortly afterwards. These laws established rules for mining generally and, more specifically, for claim location, time to develop a mine, and the process for gaining title to the claim.<sup>9</sup>

When the Civil War ended in 1865, Arizona mining was in a shambles, but the influx of war veterans and the earlier return of the U.S. Army gradually brought life back to the territory. Over the next 20 years, 15 army posts were established, as was the reservation system for managing the Native American population. As a result, prospecting and mine development flourished and expanded to levels previously only dreamed about.

The absence of an efficient transportation system to the outside world, other than the stage and

freight lines, kept mining somewhat in check until construction of the first railroad across Arizona in 1877-1880. The Southern Pacific Railroad allowed easier outside access; enabled the shipment of large mining machinery, related equipment, and supplies into southern Arizona; and provided a means to ship raw ore, or partially processed ore, to smelters elsewhere in the country. Tucson, because of its central location and the development of railroad facilities, quickly became the center from which equipment and goods were shipped to outlying mines.

Successful mines established before the arrival of the railroad were able to expand operations, acquire new and larger-scale technologies, and more quickly get a product to market. This is true even though most of the mines were not adjacent to the railroad; indeed, some were many miles from it. The construction of a second railroad, the New Mexico and Arizona Railroad, from Benson on the Southern Pacific Railroad southwest to Nogales on the Mexican border, in 1882 opened up further opportunities for mines in southern Arizona.<sup>10</sup>

From the 1870s to about World War I, tens of thousands of mine claims were located across southern Arizona, and thousands of mines were developed or redeveloped. Some of these were mineral deposits that had been discovered and worked by Spaniards and Mexicans. Among the best known were mines at Harshaw, Arivaca, Greaterville, Quijotoa, Mowry, Oro Blanco, Ajo, Twin Buttes, Silver Bell, Gunsight, Tombstone, Bisbee, Empire, Mammoth, Rosemont, Helvetia, and the Sierritas. Very few mines were worked continuously for extended periods. Most would prosper until the rich ore played out or the limited capital was expended. Then, after a period of time—and with new capital, new technologies, or new owners, or all three—work would begin anew, only to repeat the process eventually.

The long-term trend in mining in southern Arizona can be characterized by increasing consolidation and concentration of holdings by fewer and fewer companies and thus by larger-scaled operations, the use of more heavy equipment and machinery, the mining of lower quality ore, and a reduction in the numbers of people in the work force.

For the most part, the mines were located in the approximately 25 major isolated mountain ranges within the basin and range physiographic province of southern Arizona. The mines were included within a few dozen mining districts throughout the area; there were 22 districts in Pima County alone. The districts had well-defined boundaries and were created under the requirements of state and federal laws.<sup>11</sup>

It is impossible, as well as unnecessary, to mention all of the important and largely successful mines of the late 19th and 20th centuries in southern Arizona. Instead, three of the large, successful, long-lived mining operations in the area, Ajo, Tombstone, Bisbee and Warren will be highlighted. In addition to their historical development, the cultural features of these communities will be discussed.

In *Hard Places*, cultural geographer Richard V. Francaviglia portrays mining landscapes as truly distinctive cultural landscapes: "hard places" with features like unfamiliar building types and vast open-pits that speak of environmental abuse, pragmatism, and exploitation.<sup>12</sup> Ajo, Tombstone, Bisbee, and Warren, Arizona can thus be studied as cultural landscapes. The visual character of each historic mining district is determined by its site, layout, and architecture, plus the legacy of distinct processes described by Francaviglia: differentiation, stratification, and homogenization.

The mining landscapes in question lie within or near low, desert scrub-clad mountains of southern Arizona. Ajo, Tombstone, and Warren occu-

py relatively flat sites while Bisbee is located in steep mountainous terrain. All four show variable degrees of land modification caused by mining activity. While Tombstone's underground mines which tunnel beneath mountains are less visible, the huge open-pit copper mines, leach dumps, and tailing ponds of the Warren and Ajo mining districts make an enormous visual impact. The layout or the street pattern and property parcel arrangement of each community varies greatly, principally due to topography and historic ownership (fig. 5.2). Architecture comprises the "built environment" - the buildings, structures, and objects - in these mining landscapes. Boldly profiled industrial architecture, impressive commercial and institutional buildings, as well as a hierarchy of residential types are found to a greater or lesser degree in each community.

According to Francaviglia, mining landscapes are the result of several processes that help give them a distinctive look. One process, differentiation, is a geographic expression of technological, economic, and social factors seen in land use patterns. Industry is the dominant factor and the community serves it. Stratification, the process by which people are divided into classes or social strata, is seen especially in the location of residences and the hierarchy of housing types. Homogenization is the tendency to standardize building under single mining company ownership with the result of greater visual uniformity.<sup>15</sup> These processes can be applied, to a greater or lesser extent, to the four mining communities to be profiled.

## Ajo

Lying in the Little Ajo Mountains, the copper mines of Ajo are located in western Pima County about 129 miles west of Tucson. As mentioned, the Ajo Mining District deposits were worked on a small scale in the 18th century and later, at the ratification of the Gadsden Purchase Treaty,

by Peter R. Brady and his party. Brady's company, the Arizona Mining and Trading Company, was the first incorporated mining company in

Arizona. When the rich and easily obtainable ore was played out, the venture came to an end.<sup>14</sup>

The mines remained quiet for the next 40 years or so, although other mines were being developed in the general area after about 1870. Limited mining occurred in the Ajo area in the 1890s, and in 1908, the Randall Mines Co. took over the mines.<sup>15</sup> In 1910, John C. Greenway became the general manager of the Calumet and Arizona Mining Company; he opened the New Cornelia open pit mine in 1917 (fig. 5.3).<sup>16</sup>

The first shipment of electrolytic copper was made in 1918. After World War I, the company was hard pressed to keep operating, primarily because the price of copper had declined. To survive, the New Cornelia, which had been partially owned by the Calumet and Arizona company after 1911, became wholly owned by it in 1929. This company in turn merged with Phelps Dodge in 1931. The Great Depression led to a suspension of work in 1932. Work resumed in 1934, and the mine operated continuously until its closure in 1985.<sup>17</sup>

Ajo has a unique layout and architecture and is an excellent example of the processes of differentiation, stratification, and homogenization described by Francaviglia. There is no doubt that mining built this town, once the nation's third largest producer of copper, given the inescapable presence of the enormous pit, slag heaps, smelter, tailing ponds, and cluster of corrugated metal buildings. A considerable support community, eventually having a population of around 6,000, was required to extract and process its copper ore.<sup>18</sup> A 1964 aerial photograph illustrates striking land use differentiation within a small area in the Ajo District (fig. 5.4).

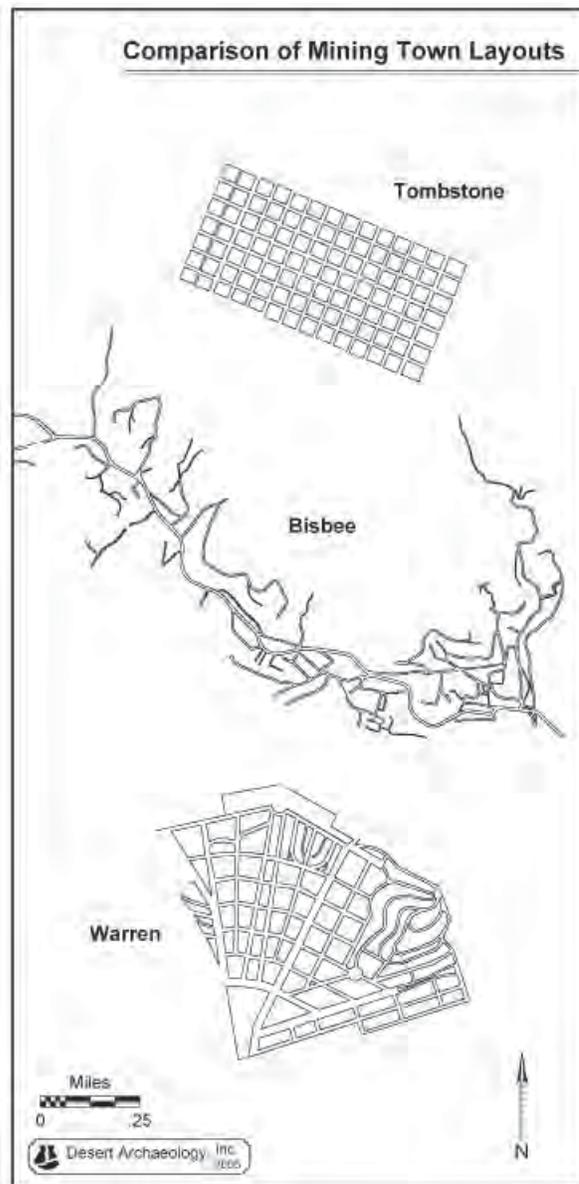


Fig. 5.2 – Comparison of mining town layouts: Tombstone, a standard gridiron plan; Bisbee, an organic plan; and Warren, a professionally designed plan based on the City Beautiful movement. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology after Janet Parkhurst.



*Fig. 5.3 - New Cornelia Mine Smelter, Ajo, Arizona. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson Tucson (BN 204416)*



*Fig. 5.4 - Ajo Pit, Phelps Dodge Co., 1964. This oblique aerial illustrates differentiation in a mining landscape. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 41352)*

Ajo was a “model company town,” a type of widely-publicized industrial community that developed through enlightened planning and socially responsible town management, serving as a model by example. Around 1914, Minnesota architects William M. Kenyon and Maurice F. Maine designed a community zoned into discrete sections including the mine and socially stratified “American Townsite,” “Mexican Townsite,” and “Indian Townsite.” (The latter two were demolished for expansion of the pit). Exemplifying homogenization, American Townsite included a radial, symmetrical, City Beautiful street layout and adoption of Spanish Colonial Revival style for the major buildings and houses. (Phelps Dodge also built hundreds of less inspiring, uniform residences in later Ajo subdivisions.) Social stratification in American Townsite, today a National Register district, occurred in an obvious hierarchy of housing types. Large, architect-designed, hilltop residences once built for the gener-

al manager and mine superintendent symbolically overlooked the mine and town. Similar but less pretentious residences once housing foremen, etc. appeared in the level splayed plat. The balance of houses, lower in quality and in less desirable locations, once served the miners themselves.<sup>19</sup>

## Tombstone

One of the most famous of Arizona’s silver mining locales is the Tombstone Mining District in the Tombstone Hills in Cochise County. In addition to its productive silver mines in the late 19th century, much of its notoriety stems from the feud between the Earps and Doc Holliday and the Clantons and McLowerys and the subsequent shoot-out at the OK Corral 1881.<sup>20</sup>

Tombstone began with the location of a silver claim by Edward Schiefflin in 1877 (fig. 5.5). In 1878, Schiefflin, with his brother Al and Richard Gird, located additional claims, includ-



*Fig. 5.5 - Grand Central Mill & Mining Co., 1881, showing Tombstone's mining origins. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 42005)*

ing the famous Toughnut, Lucky Cuss, and Goodenough.<sup>21</sup>

The Tombstone townsite was laid out in 1879 about a mile from Schiefflin's camp and was incorporated and made the seat of Cochise County in 1881. At that time, the population had skyrocketed to about 7,000, approximately the same size as Tucson. The camp enjoyed about 10 years of very active and productive life before the onset of a slow decline.<sup>22</sup>

In the 1880s, problems with flooding in the mines began to occur. In 1886-1887, the surface works of the Grand Central and Contention mines burned, causing their massive pumping operations to come to a halt. As a result, much of the mining in the district came to a close, because the richest ore was below water.<sup>23</sup> In 1901, several mines were combined to form the Tombstone Consolidated Mine Company (fig. 5.6), which made another effort to pump water out of the mines. By 1903, as much as 4,200,000 gallons were being pumped daily.<sup>24</sup>

Additional pumping problems occurred in 1907. In 1909, because of an accident, the pumps failed in the main mines. Despite attempts to solve the water crisis, Tombstone Consolidated was forced

to declare bankruptcy in 1911, and its holdings were sold to Phelps Dodge in 1914.<sup>25</sup>

Phelps Dodge tried to restart the mines, but gave up in 1918. Small-scale sporadic mining, mostly by lessees, has taken place in the Tombstone district ever since.<sup>26</sup>

Unlike the other towns under discussion, Tombstone doesn't "read" as an obvious part of a mining landscape but it can be studied for its layout and its architecture. Tombstone Townsite (1880) and its 19th-century subdivisions had a simple surveyor-designed grid plan (fig. 5.2). Fostering extraordinary land speculation, the grid was a natural choice for such a location in spite of several major washes and rather hilly terrain. This vernacular platting tradition was imported to territorial Arizona by settlers familiar with its "principles" from other parts of the United States.<sup>27</sup>

The former silver mining boomtown is well known today as a tourist town that has capitalized on its bawdy, violent, frontier-outpost history. Visitors viewing a restored OK Corral and an array of false-front buildings with showy signs and fake porches on Allen Street learn relatively little of Tombstone's mining history. The



*Fig. 5.6 – Tombstone Consolidated Mining & Milling Co., Tombstone, Arizona, 1908. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 28306)*

commercial core, a six-block district, has been re-created to represent the 1880s, a preservation interpretation based on myth generated by commercialism (fig. 5.7).<sup>28</sup> Tombstone does feature several institutional buildings that have been preserved properly: e.g., the two-story, brick City Hall, the Courthouse, and St. Paul's Episcopal Church. In addition, it has a zone of historic residences with a good representation of Anglo-American vernacular types, many of which are built of adobe.

## Bisbee

The towns of Bisbee and Warren both lie in the Warren Mining District in the Mule Mountains in Cochise County. Silver deposits were first discovered here in 1877, and a mining camp was established in the summer of 1880 at the confluence of Tombstone Canyon and what later

became known as Brewery Gulch. Silver quickly became of secondary interest when huge deposits of copper ore were discovered.<sup>29</sup>

The famous Copper Queen Mining Company was incorporated in 1881, and its mine, the Copper Queen, became the leading mining operation in Bisbee for many decades.<sup>30</sup> The Copper Queen was acquired by the Phelps Dodge Corporation in 1884, and gradually the company was able to acquire other important mining properties in the area.<sup>31</sup>

In the late 1880s, Bisbee had a population of about 500; by 1900, it had increased to about 6,000 persons. The community expanded up both sides of every adjacent canyon to create a very high-density environment, with the main commercial section located at the mouth of Brewery Gulch.<sup>32</sup>



*Fig. 5.7 - Tombstone, 1881. A view of Allen Street, Tombstone's main commercial district. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 60672)*

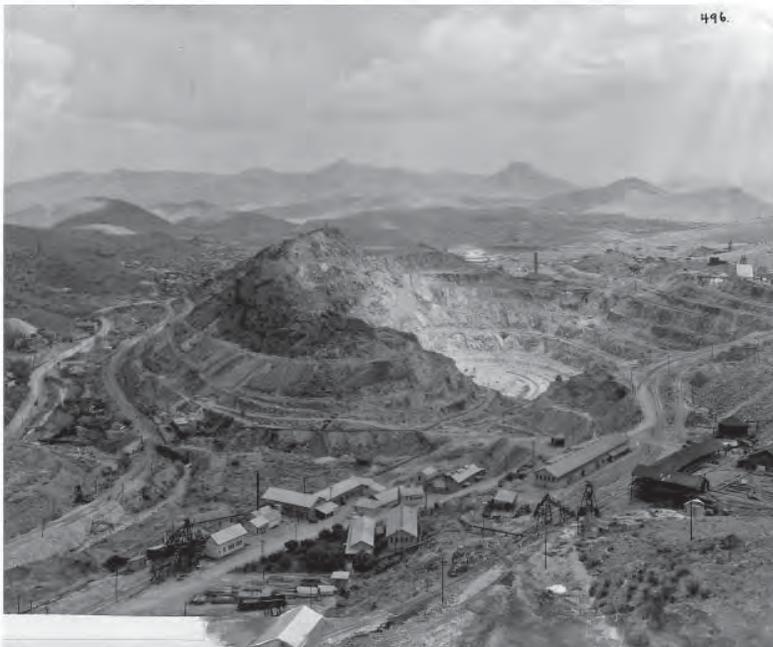
In 1901, the Calumet and Arizona Mining Company was organized. This company, which owned over 170 claims, quickly became a serious rival of the Copper Queen. In 1927, miners in its Campbell shaft hit the largest mass of copper ore ever found in Bisbee.<sup>53</sup> The Copper Queen company merged with the Calumet and Arizona firm in 1931 and thus acquired most of the important mining properties it did not already own.

World War II gave new life to Bisbee mining, which continued more or less unabated until 1975, when mining in the Lavender Pit ceased.<sup>54</sup>

Bisbee is noteworthy for its striking site, layout, and architecture and how it historically exemplified stratification. The Warren Mining District produced its minerals from a sizeable ore-bearing tract of land that resulted in two joined, terraced, open-pit projects, the Sacramento Hill Pit (fig. 5.8), begun in 1917, and the much larger scale Lavender Pit, begun in 1952. Part of this once prolific district and located near the pit, Old Bisbee today is the highest, most historic of eleven distinct but related settlements. At an

average elevation of 5,300 feet, Bisbee includes most features of a prosperous, early 20th-century, Anglo-American mining hill town representing Arizona's late territorial years and the Depression era.<sup>55</sup>

Site topography strongly influenced the layout of Bisbee, a community that developed organically on and within the slopes of narrow canyons forming clefts in the Mule Mountains (fig. 5.9). The terracing used to construct the pits also characterizes the hillsides of the residential settlement. Because of the steepness of its site, Bisbee has features like retaining walls, stairs, bridges, and flood channels among its prominent infrastructure. Along with sidewalks and road paving projects, many of these features were built as part of the WPA 1938 Bisbee Campaign. In Bisbee's distinct, socially stratified neighborhoods, strong ethnic or class identities became associated with topography through the names given to certain hills or canyons. While company management clustered on prominent hillside or hilltop locations with names like Quality Hill, smaller, simpler housing for mine workers was



*Fig. 5.8 Sacramento Pit, Bisbee, c.1890. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 496)*

found in modest neighborhoods in less desirable locations.<sup>56</sup>

Near the pits, abandoned although imposing industrial structures of reinforced concrete, wood, and corrugated metal still stand. In Old Bisbee, densely-concentrated, contiguous commercial buildings in a National Register district around Tombstone Canyon abut several narrow streets, principally Main Street and lower Brewery Gulch. Interspersed on prominent sites among the business blocks are several, institutional buildings that house much of the community's governmental, educational and religious activity.<sup>57</sup> The bulk of Bisbee's residential development, mostly vernacular, covers an area adjacent to and many times larger than the commercial core district.<sup>58</sup>

## Warren

Located on the upper reaches of a broad, gently sloping, alluvial fan southeast of the Lavender Pit Mine and the town of Bisbee, Warren is noteworthy for its historic layout and residential uniformity based on City Beautiful principles. Although short-lived, this early twentieth-century movement had a strong influence on the direction of urban planning in the United States. In January 1906, under the auspices of the Calumet and Arizona Mining Company, the Warren Realty and Development Co. hired the team of Warren H. Manning, a nationally famous landscape architect and city planner, to design the townsite plan, buildings, and houses. Manning drew up a City Beautiful plan that was both axial and formal, with radiating and diago-



*Fig. 5.9 - Bird's-eye view of Bisbee illustrating how Old Bisbee is a hilltown built on terraces. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 56124)*

nal boulevards providing distant views or closed by an architectural focal point. Apparently, the radial layout of Washington D.C., recently refurbished under City Beautiful guidelines, provided the inspiration for this distant town set in the Arizona desert. As a stylistic theme chosen for the townsite, the Bungalow contributed to the concept of architectural unity, a basic tenet of the City Beautiful ideal.<sup>59</sup>

On a relatively open site, professionally-planned Warren (fig. 5.2) is a marked contrast to the nearby hilltown of Bisbee which is congested and was haphazardly developed. Warren features a long Vista Park flanked on either side by wide, tree-lined boulevards, spacious lots and a predominance of California Bungalows (fig. 5.10). Originally built in an idyllic setting with panoramic views of the Mule Mountains and natural desert features, the community is now dwarfed to

*Fig. 5.10 – Warren, row of trees in front of bungalows along Vista Park showing City Beautiful planning, 2004. Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst*



*Fig. 5.11 – Warren, Arthur Douglas House at upper end of Vista park with leach dump behind, 2004. Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst*



its north by the rise of Leach Dump No. 7 (fig. 5.11), one of the most impressive topographic features in the Warren Mining District.<sup>40</sup>

### Summary

In sum, Ajo, Tombstone, Bisbee, and Warren, Arizona, are communities that are integral parts of mining cultural landscapes, each with a distinctive site, layout, and architecture tempered by historic processes that determined land use, residential location, standardization of structures, and so forth. The integrity of Ajo, Bisbee, and Warren as historic cultural landscapes remains strong while Tombstone has practically lost its mining community identity.

### ENDNOTES

1. James E. Officer, "Mining in Hispanic Arizona: Myth and Reality," in *History of Mining in Arizona*, ed. J. Michael Canty and Michael N. Greeley (Tucson: Mining Club of the Southwest Foundation, 1991), 2: 5.
2. John C. Lacy, "Early History of Mining in Arizona. Acquisition of Mineral Rights 1539-1866," in *History of Mining in Arizona*, ed. J. Michael Canty and Michael N. Greeley (Tucson: Mining Club of the Southwest Foundation, 1987), 1: 5.
3. Officer, "Mining in Hispanic Arizona," 5.
4. Ibid., 5-6. David D. Rabb and Clement K. Chase, "History of Mineral Processing in Arizona," in *History of Mining in Arizona*, 1: 179. Kieran McCarty, *Desert Documentary. The Spanish Years, 1767-1821*, Historical Monograph No. 4 (Tucson: Arizona Historical Society, 1976), 32.
5. McCarty, *Desert Documentary*, 86; Officer, "Mining in Hispanic Arizona," 2: 7.
6. James E. Officer, *Hispanic Arizona, 1536-1856* (Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1987), 219, 243-45.
7. Ibid., 279; Lacy, "Early History of Mining in Arizona," 1: 6. Michael N. Greeley, "The Early Influence of Mining in Arizona," in *History of Mining in Arizona*, 1: 15-16.
8. Lacy, "Early History of Mining in Arizona," 1: 7-10.
9. Ibid., 10.
10. David F. Myrick, *Railroads of Arizona, Volume I: The Southern Roads* (Berkeley: Howell-North Books, 1975), 264-69.
11. Stanton B. Keith, *Index of Mining Properties in Pima County, Arizona*, Bulletin 189, The Arizona Bureau of Mines (Tucson: University of Arizona, 1974), 8-9.
12. Richard V. Francaviglia, *Hard Places. Reading the Landscape of America's Historic Mining Districts* (Iowa City: University of Iowa Press, 1991).
13. Ibid., 66, 99, 116.
14. Workers of the Writers' Program (compilers), *The WPA Guide to 1950s Arizona* (Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1989), 50, 90. Keith, *Index of Mining Properties in Pima County*, 8-9.
15. Myrick, *Railroads of Arizona*, 1: 398.
16. Ibid., 398, 403.
17. Myrick, *Railroads of Arizona*, 1: 409-414; Keith, *Index of Mining Properties in Pima County*, 9; Tucson-Pima Public Library Infoline (16 Oct 2004).
- 16 Lynn Bailey, *Bisbee: Queen of the Copper Camps* (Tucson: Westernlore Press, 1983), 11-20.
- 17 Ibid., 26.
18. Janet H. Parkhurst, "Ajo Townsite Historic District," National Register Nomination (October 2001), sec. 7: 1.
18. Janet H. Parkhurst, "Ajo Townsite Historic District," National Register Nomination (October 2001), sec. 7: 1.
19. Ibid., sec. 8: 1, 37.
20. Workers of the Writers' Program, *The WPA Guide to 1950s Arizona*, 244
21. Myrick, *Railroads of Arizona*, 1: 443
22. Workers of the Writers' Program, *The WPA Guide to 1950s Arizona*, 244.
23. Ibid. 245.
24. Myrick, *Railroads of Arizona*, 1: 455.

25. Ibid., 1: 457-458; Workers of the Writers' Program, *The WPA Guide to 1950s Arizona*, 245.
26. Myrick, *Railroads of Arizona*, 1: 462.
27. Johns & Strittmatter Inc., "Historic Resources Inventory and Report of Tombstone, Arizona," Report for the Arizona State Historic Preservation Office, Arizona State Parks, (Phoenix, June 1996), chap. 2: 4.
28. Francaviglia, *Hard Places*, 177-178.
29. Lynn Bailey, *Bisbee: Queen of the Copper Camps* (Tucson: Westernlore Press, 1983), 11-20.
30. Ibid., 26.
31. Myrick, *Railroads of Arizona*, 1: 177; Bailey, *Bisbee: Queen of the Copper Camps*, 25.
32. Bailey, *Bisbee: Queen of the Copper Camps*, 55, 73-74.
33. Ibid., 42, 45.
34. Ben T. Traywick, *Bisbee is the Name* (Tombstone: Red Marie's Bookstore, 1988), 17. Myrick, *Railroads of Arizona*, 1: 252.
35. Harris Sobin, "Old Bisbee Historical Residential District, Cochise County, Arizona," National Register Nomination (Draft) (September 2004), sec. 7: 1, sec 8: 11.
36. Ibid., sec. 7: 2, 3, 7.
37. Marjorie H. Wilson, Janet Stewart, James Garrison, Billy G. Garrett, and Thomas S. Rothweiler, "Bisbee Historic District," National Register Nomination (1980), sec. 7: 1.
38. Sobin, "Old Bisbee Historical Residential District," sec. 7: 8, 9.
39. Woodward Architectural Group, "Warren: The City Beautiful," Historic Resources Inventory and Report (1993), 25, 27.
40. Francaviglia, *Hard Places*, 22, 24.





6

UNIVERSITY  
of  
ARIZONA

SOUTHERN  
PACIFIC R.R.

CITY

LIMITS

---

# 20TH-CENTURY RESIDENTIAL LANDSCAPES

R. Brooks Jeffery

**B**oth before and after World War I (1914-1918), Americans suffering from respiratory diseases, and in particular, tuberculosis, came to Arizona and Tucson for treatment in its dry, warm climate, building Tucson's reputation as a destination for "health seekers." The rush of people with respiratory ailments, known as "lungers," was accommodated by sites throughout Tucson known as "tent cities." Because lungers were feared, they were prevented from renting accommodations in town; that, in turn, led to zoning and building regulations that increased ventilation and restricted the amount of land which a house could occupy, all in attempts to prevent the spread of disease.

Tucson, and the West in general, was also a destination for tourists seeking to discover the exotic landscape and culture that they had only read about before. Personal travel, now dominated by the automobile, increased tremendously after World War I. Tourism operators, such as the Harvey Hotel Company, catered to those in search of the exotic quality of the Southwest and used its unfamiliar architecture as a vehicle to promote a romanticized image. Just as the eastern states had selected historic references in the use of English Colonial Revival styles beginning in the 19th century, promoters and architects in the West extracted architectural characteristics from previous cultures to produce romanticized revival styles for this region. This romantic revival movement was crystallized in and disseminated by the 1915 Panama-California Exposition in San Diego, whose buildings (in today's Balboa Park), designed by Bertrand Goodhue, Richard Requa, and others promoted the Spanish Colonial Revival style as an appropriate regional architectural expression. Other architects, including Mary Colter and John Gaw Meem, defined similarly romantic expressions for other regions of the Southwest. The Exposition also marks a shift

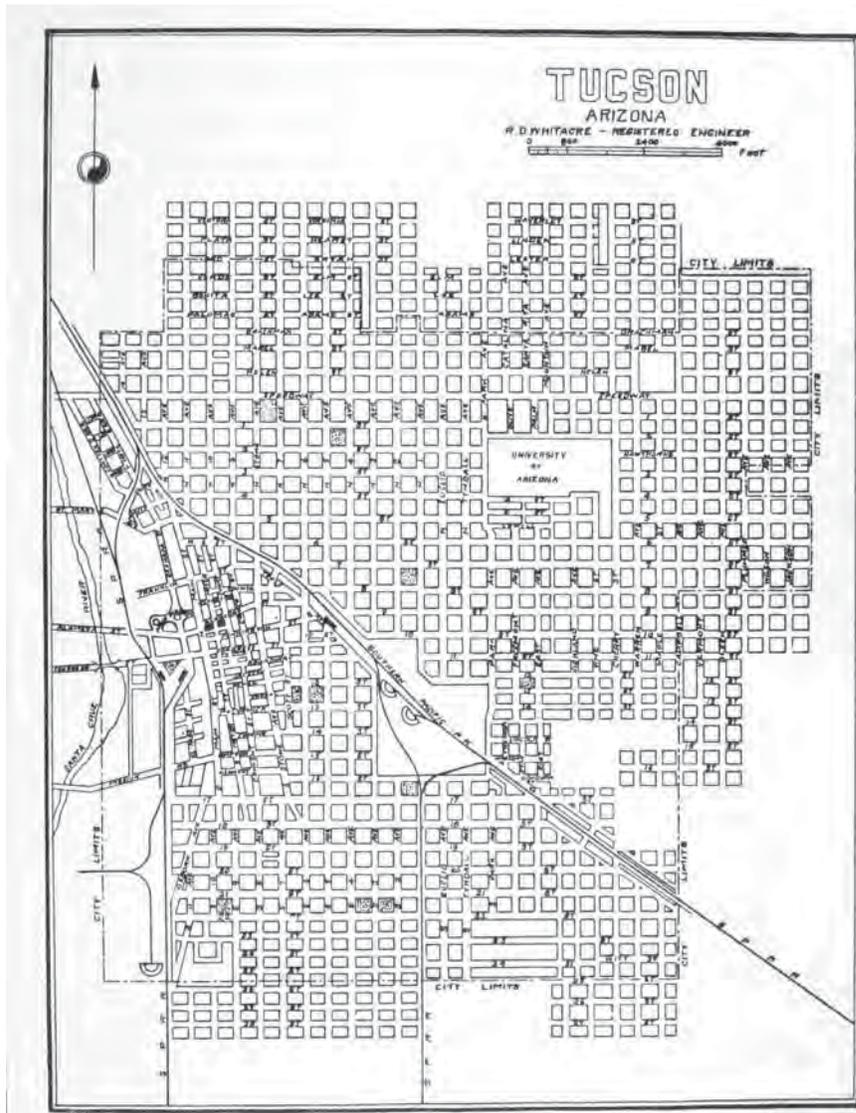
in Tucson's cultural and architectural inspiration from the East and Midwest to California (fig. 6.1).

Up until 1920, Tucson was the largest and most important settlement in Arizona due to its dominance in the five "C's" of the Arizona economy: copper, cattle, cotton, citrus, and climate. Now a health destination for the ailing, Tucson had to change its negative image to attract new residents, businesses, and the economic prosperity associated with them. In 1922, the Tucson Sunshine Climate Club was formed to promote the attractions of southern Arizona for the benefit of local merchants and hotelkeepers. Tourism and boosterism became an important factor in the growth and prosperity of Tucson and soon were represented by the phenomenon of winter visitors.



*Fig. 6.1 – Architectural styles such as the Spanish Colonial Revival and the Pueblo Revival were used in the 1920s and 1950s to associate new subdivision developments with a romanticized image of the area's Hispanic heritage. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

Subdivision development in Tucson, outside the city limits, was rampant (fig. 6.2). The original 1872 grid street pattern expanded to the north and east, away from the original townsite, with the University as a primary destination for urban growth. Transportation had an increasing impact on growth and subdivision development in Tucson. Developments previously outside the perceived limits of the town were becoming not only accessible but desirable as an escape from the growing automobile congestion of the urbanized center. During the boom years of the 1920s, great portions of the desert were subdivided in anticipation of continuing high demand for residential subdivisions. Winter visitors often bought second homes in Tucson in many of these exclusive subdivisions. By the mid-1930s, the 1929 stock market crash had put the real estate market into a tailspin except for the very wealthy, who continued to come to Tucson.



*Fig. 6.2 – Plan of Tucson, c1925. By the end of the 1920s, Tucson’s suburban residential development spread east and north of downtown, encompassing the University of Arizona, while the subdivision layouts continued the gridiron patterns established by the original township map of 1872. Courtesy of the Arizona Architectural Archives, CALA, University of Arizona.*

The orthogonal grid, formerly associated with equitable land distribution, now became associated with middle class living standards, with small lots and equally small houses, some as small as 900 square feet. Beginning in 1915, subdivisions were developed with deed restrictions intended to ensure property values through exclusivity. As a way of distinguishing affluent neighborhoods from those of the middle class, alternatives to the gridiron subdivision layout were introduced by California developers and architects. In 1928 alone, three innovative subdivisions were planned that began to attract the affluent to Tucson: El Encanto Estates, Colonia Solana, and the Catalina Foothills Estates (see tour site descriptions).

Each of these subdivisions was designed to provide a unique environment and became a model for subsequent subdivision development. Although unique, each subdivision incorporated common elements: curvilinear street patterns in direct contrast to the existing gridiron standard, protection of the existing landscape and its use as a marketing tool, promotion of a romantic image of Tucson's relationship to its Spanish heritage, and deed restrictions which controlled homeownership, minimum construction costs, and the architectural expression of individual residences. In a city where new residents arrived constantly, land and houses increasingly became speculative commodities, bought and sold as the promise of future growth increased their value. Real estate entrepreneurs purchased large tracts of land, developed services, built houses without specific clients, and sold them with a marketing strategy associating the architecture with an ideal image of Tucson.

In these subdivision developments a supervisory architect was hired to oversee adherence to architectural control standards. Residential architects and builders during this time continued to promote revivalist architectural styles,

especially the Spanish Colonial, Mission, and Pueblo revival styles. These styles all portrayed traditions external to Tucson's cultural heritage, but were nonetheless accepted as examples of a generic Southwestern architectural vocabulary dictating the architectural expression of Tucson's residential architecture.

The attached, screened sleeping porches of the previous generation of houses were built into the new house forms as exterior living rooms and became referred to as "Arizona rooms." The mid-1930s also brought the introduction of mechanical cooling systems to Tucson. Houses were retrofitted with evaporative, or swamp, coolers which added humidity and thus lowered the temperature during the dry summer months, although many residents continued to sleep outdoors or on sleeping porches. These innovations, especially as they continued to be refined, resulted in a lower number of residents leaving Tucson during the summer and depressed the market for compact houses, which coincided with subdivision developments encouraging larger, rambling house plans. The impact of the automobile on our culture also elevated the visibility of the garage from that of a detached shed facing the back alley to that of an attached and integral piece of the overall street facade composition.

After World War II, Tucson was marked by new economic and political factors which began to determine the appearance of Tucson's residential built environment. The war and Tucson's Davis-Monthan airbase introduced to the city thousands of men who, in their desire to start a new life after the war, returned to Tucson as permanent residents. People flooded into Tucson, and Arizona generally, for its warm climate, inexpensive living, and new employment opportunities.

Urban development during the late 1940s rapidly extended beyond the corporate limits of Tucson. Subdivisions prematurely platted in the 1920s north and east of the urban core were now con-

sumed by expansive growth. The restrictions on building during the war had left a profound housing shortage, which, combined with an exploding population, made Tucson a haven for land developers, real estate agents, architects, and builders who flocked to its growth industry, construction.

As in earlier periods, new centers of development drew the population away from the city core (fig. 6.3). Low-density, semi-rural housing, the absence of city taxes, and relaxed county building standards encouraged continued development beyond the perceived geographic boundaries of the Tucson Basin. Initial development north of the Rillito River expanded and made for denser

inhabitation of the Catalina Foothills. A new corridor of development consolidated northward along the alignment of US Highways 89 and 80 (Oracle Road), overtaking an area known for its citrus groves. Low-density suburban development spilled over the eastern watercourse, the Pantano Wash, and began to consume most of the available land in the basin. Land development, however, was not continuous, but rather adhered to a “leap-frog” approach, avoiding expensive open land in favor of pushing further outward, thus encroaching upon the fragile ecosystems of the eastern, northern, and western foothills of the basin.



*Fig. 6.3 – Aerial view of eastern Tucson subdivisions, c1950. Post-World War II development in Tucson was characterized by low-density suburban sprawl throughout the Tucson basin. “Leapfrog” land development pushed Tucson’s growth outward, left behind undeveloped infill tracts of land, and began encroaching on the fragile ecosystems of the valley’s edges. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (PC 177 #1170)*

By 1950, two-thirds of Tucson's metropolitan population lived outside the city limits and was under the jurisdiction of Pima County planning. Aggressive annexation policies between 1952 and 1960 under Mayor Don Hummel added 61.4 square miles to the City of Tucson, resulting in a city population surpassing 200,000 and an immediate expansion of the tax base. After 1960, however, annexation programs met with considerable resistance from residents outside the city limits as annexation meant tax increases to cover the cost of urban services such as police, fire, public transportation, water, and power.

Pima County had limited authority to control and guide the urbanization process taking place outside the city limits until 1949 when the state established a zoning authority in the state's two largest counties, Maricopa and Pima, for the purpose of regulating and controlling land use. In 1959, a comprehensive regional transportation study was conducted which led to a 1965 proposal to improve the arterial street system and included plans for an extensive system of parkways and freeways to accommodate needs predicted by 1980. During public hearings in 1970, Tucsonans not only opposed the projected system of freeways or limited access roads but also the notion of continued growth inherent in the plan's population and land use projections. This has been considered the initial rallying point for the formation of a no- or limited-growth philosophy in Tucson, as prospects of exploding community expansion fueled intense public debate. Controlled growth ultimately was viewed as unattainable because municipal government ruled it illegal to deny building permits for new construction, thus protecting the community from potentially adverse effects on its economic health.

The once inexhaustible supply of low cost, peripheral land gradually became limited, which, combined with high interest rates in the 1980s, slowed development in Tucson. Area plans, such

as the Rincon Area Plan, held the line against sprawl, but other areas, such as the original 1928 Catalina Foothills Estates development, passed up their opportunity to renew initial deed restrictions limiting density. Tucson's surrounding foothills, whose lush desert was once a marketing tool, were increasingly despoiled by demand for denser development whose character was not unlike that of any other suburban development. Although some regulatory incentives promoted urban infill on vacant land and encouraged the re-use and renovation of older dwellings within the central city core, these infill programs were eventually discontinued. People continued to move further out, destroying more of the natural desert each year.

The corollary to Tucson's peripheral urban sprawl was its attempt to revitalize its downtown through federally assisted urban renewal programs. Federal funds, through the US Housing Act of 1954 and the Model Cities Act of 1966, were made available to "attack decay and blight" in American cities and "revitalize" downtown areas. Boosters of this proposal argued that the solution to the drain on economic viability downtown was the development of government and community infrastructure that would reinvigorate commercial and retail interests. Major demolition took place between 1967 and 1970, with the removal of 250 buildings, the original presidial Plaza de las Armas, and the Plaza de la Mesilla, and the displacement of hundreds of people representing generations of Hispanic, African-American, and ethnic Chinese families who had occupied downtown neighborhoods. Replacing these structures and spaces over the next 10 years was a city and county government office complex that now dominates the western portion of downtown Tucson. Beyond working hours, however, the redeveloped area failed to draw people back to downtown as it lacked the

diversity of activities that would have sustained it as a cultural center.

The architectural expression of Tucson directly after the war was affected by two phenomena: the incorporation of Modernism as a national architectural movement and federally insured home loans. Modern architecture brought new materials and forms, but contrasted sharply to the revivalist architectural expression still prevalent in Tucson at that time. By the 1970s, however, Modern stylistic expressions were so disliked that many were demolished or revamped to appear more “Southwestern,” as Tucson reverted to an idea of itself that was a romantic, and, in most cases, superficial interpretation of its Spanish heritage.

Tucson’s post-war housing boom was also greatly influenced by the emergence of federally-insured housing loans provided by the Federal Housing Administration (FHA). To ensure building value, the FHA required builders to follow design standards that began to dictate not only construction materials and building processes but also the basic house form. These standards encouraged the use of prefabricated materials and streamlined the production of houses within a subdivision development. Houses were built with production-line efficiency with separate crews moving down a row of plots to pour the concrete floor slab and erect wood frame or concrete block walls and pre-manufactured roof trusses, with other crews for finish work. These houses also blended the characteristics of the emerging open-interior Ranch house prototype from California, appliance-filled and oriented to the outdoors, a prototype that conformed well to the FHA guidelines by including features such as outdoor patios with sliding glass doors. Cheap energy and the availability of residential air-conditioning systems expanded development in the desert Southwest and encouraged a neglect of the environment as a significant influence in building

design. The advent of the ranch house and its suburban neighborhood signaled a major cultural shift in America, and in Tucson. Houses became more introverted; front porches were traded for back patios; automobiles supplanted pedestrians; and television replaced conversation.

The same FHA financing options available to individual homebuyers were also available to building companies, enabling them to enter the marketplace as residential developers. Builders and bankers quickly became the driving forces in shaping the bland and repetitive architectural appearance of residential subdivisions. Out-of-town builders and developers colonized the Tucson Basin with an architectural expression that was a generic image of the greater Southwest promotable to an emerging transient homeowner who didn’t stay long enough to understand the complexity of Tucson’s cultural and architectural heritage. These developers didn’t care about Tucson’s sense of community, but rather its fertile housing market.

Tucson’s 20th-century residential landscapes, therefore, represent an evolution of land-use attitudes, regulatory controls, and typological and stylistic expressions. These landscapes also play an important role in conveying Tucson’s ever-changing cultural identity.

(this text was largely excerpted from Anne M. Nequette and R. Brooks Jeffery, *A Guide to Tucson Architecture* [Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 2002])

7

---

# TRADITIONAL TYPOLOGIES— NEW APPLICATIONS

Melissa J. Huber and Michael Lovato

**P**re-20th century vernacular architecture in southern Arizona developed as a direct response to a distinct set of extreme conditions. The hot, dry climate, remote location, and confluence of vastly different cultures produced an architectural language that is both unique and specific to this region and highly logical in its formulation of building layouts and utilization of materials. The cultural composition of the region before the arrival of the railroad consisted of a fairly balanced mix of Native American, Spanish, and American peoples that promoted a free exchange of cultural traditions. In the late 19th and early 20th centuries the cultural makeup of the region was greatly altered by the influx of Americans who came west with the railroad. Their mass migration resulted in a distinctly American cultural hegemony, dominating most of the new buildings executed in the 20th century. New technologies and a desire to compete for viability with more firmly established American cities in the east resulted in the development of a building stock that became increasingly out of touch with the conditions that had led to the evolution of the region's unique vernacular architecture.

In the late 20th century, a shift in societal values began to occur, largely spurred by the energy crisis of the 1970s and rising awareness of the value of cultural diversity. The shift was towards a more resource- and place-conscious architecture. The extremes of Tucson's location made it a perfect place for re-examination of the architectural logic inherent in traditional building materials and types. A revival of traditional materials and methods, including adobe and rammed earth construction, was matched by an abundance of passive solar designs.<sup>1</sup> Architects, including Arthur Brown and Judith Chafee who were trained as modernists, and Bob Vint and Rick Joy of the current generation, began experimenting with appropriate responses to the desert environment.

## Typologies

### Siting and Orientation

There are a number of climactic factors that influence design in the desert. The best control to mitigate these factors has long been consideration of site and orientation in building plan. For example, site selection and orientation influence the intensity and duration of radiant energy reaching the building envelope.<sup>2</sup> Likewise, an elongated floor plan can introduce additional natural light and cross ventilation throughout the building while the narrow rooms create small interior spaces that maximize the benefits of passive solar design.<sup>3</sup> Tucson Modernist Arthur Brown integrated these approaches to siting, orientation, and floor plan in his 1946 Rosenberg House. The house is long and narrow with all rooms along the north side of an east-west axis. Floor-to-ceiling glazing covers the entire 100' of the southern facade to maximize the benefits of direct sunlight in the winter, while overhangs and metal louvers shade the glass from the summer sun.<sup>4</sup>

### Shading Devices

The success of much of the region's built environment can be judged by how well it deals with extreme amounts of sun. Due to the high temperatures of the region, the difference in thermal comfort between shade and direct sunlight can be significant. Hence, one of the most effective architectural tools to increase thermal comfort is

*Fig. 7.1 – A traditional ramada in use at the San Xavier del Bac near Tucson. The structure stays put while the user moves with the shade. Courtesy of Michael Lovato*



a simple shading device. Good shade can be provided with something as basic as a well-placed tree or canopy.

Shading devices are used primarily in two different ways. The first is the overhead shade device, used to create comfortable outdoor spaces. Perhaps the most well known regional example of this type of shading device is the ramada (fig. 7.1), a structure utilized by both Native Americans and the Spanish. Ramadas, like those built by the Hohokam in the Tucson Basin after 450 CE, were typically open on all sides and constructed of sturdy wooden posts and beams with a roof of saguaro ribs and brush to provide shade.<sup>5</sup> A model form for desert architecture, the ramada offers both cross ventilation as well as shade while allowing hot air to escape through the open weave of the roof.<sup>6</sup>

In her 1975 Ramada House (for this and most of the other buildings mentioned here, see tour site descriptions), architect Judith Chafee used the classic form of a ramada to cover the building completely, thus merging the building with a distinctly Modern vocabulary into the Sonoran landscape (fig. 7.2). In all of her work Chafee sought to “respect the desert rather than modify it and interpret the regional building traditions rather than imitate their surface motifs.”<sup>7</sup> None of her works fulfills this aspiration more dramatically than the Ramada House. In addition to endowing the house with a beautiful quality of light, the ramada serves the very practical purpose of lowering the



*Fig. 7.2 – Ramada House, Tucson by Judith Chafee, 1975 uses a large ramada structure to provide a blanket of shade over the body of the house. Courtesy of Michael Lovato*

heat load on the house. With the dominance of the ramada form, the building seems as much influenced by the native village as by the Modern box.

Arthur Brown fused the age-old concept of the shade structure with modern technology in his 1952 Ball/Paylore house (fig. 7.3). The main living space is designed as a hexagon with the three southern-most faces fully glazed. A small overhang protects the glazing from direct sunlight in the hottest summer months and a unique two-segment revolving sunshade can be moved along a track that wraps around the southern portion of the house. As needed, the shades can be placed either in front of the central living area or at the sides to shade the bedrooms.<sup>8</sup>

Shading devices can also be used to shade building openings and walls from direct sunlight in order to lower solar gain. These types of shading devices are placed either horizontally or vertically, depending on the orientation of the building on the site. Deep overhangs or awnings are the most prevalent form of this kind of shading device in the Southwest and date back to Anasazi dwellings, which took advantage of cliff overhangs to protect buildings from direct sunlight. In the Spanish tradition, portales, or porches, were utilized to minimize the heat gain walls might experience during the summer months.<sup>9</sup> Today, overhangs are one of the most common devices in Tucson for mediating the sun. In the design of 120 housing units for the Hope VI Santa Rosa project, Poster-Frost Associates incorporated canopies (fig. 7.4) to provide shaded transi-



*Fig. 7.5 – Ball/Paylore House, Tucson by Arthur Brown, 1952 utilizes movable shading devices to allow for maximum solar control. Courtesy of Michael Lovato*

tional spaces and to protect the buildings from direct sunlight.

### Natural Ventilation

In the hot climate of the desert, buildings also rely on natural ventilation to keep living spaces comfortable. One of the most significant passive ventilation forms that developed to meet this need is the *zaguán*, or breezeway, and patio combination introduced by the Spanish. Air moves through a broad central hall that connects the front entrance of a building to a central courtyard or patio. Rooms flank either side of the *zaguán* and are cooled by natural cross-ventilation. The courtyard space complements the passive cooling strategy of the *zaguán* and provides a communal area to be used for outdoor living. Open to the sky, the courtyard may be filled with plants and shade that cool the air, creating a microclimate that provides ventilation and fresh air to the living spaces.<sup>10</sup>

Architects Bob Vint and Corky Poster have translated these forms into the modern adobe residence. Built in the Sonoran tradition, the Hardy Residence and Guest House by Vint combines passive solar design with a *zaguán* that connects the front entrance to a rear patio space. Likewise, Poster chose a traditional form for the Wilder House, carefully using shade and courtyard forms in conjunction with traditional materials and mechanical systems.

### Thermal Mass

Another way in which regional builders have protected their dwellings from excessive heat gain is through the use of materials and wall construction methods that possess beneficial thermal properties. The concept of thermal mass is one of the most useful tools that Tucson builders have employed since the Native American period. Greater thermal mass allows a structure to absorb heat from the sun slowly throughout the day and



*Fig. 7.4 – Hope VI Santa Rosa, Tucson by Poster Frost Associates, 2005 uses canopies to provide a shaded transition between interior and exterior and to lower solar gain. Courtesy of Michael Lovato.*

*Fig. 7.5 – Rick Joy Studio, Tucson by Rick Joy, 2000 echoes the massing and texture of the adobe buildings that surround the building through the use of rammed earth and weathered steel. Courtesy of Michael Lovato*



release it slowly throughout the night. The aridity of the desert produces a daily temperature swing of as much as 30 degrees, making thermal mass very practical as an enclosure strategy.<sup>11</sup>

### **Materiality**

Earth has been used as a building material for thousands of years. In the prehistoric Southwest, thermal mass could be created by constructing thick walls of damp earth built layer upon layer until the necessary height was attained, producing what is known as coursed or puddled adobe.<sup>12</sup> In building types from the late 17th century, Spanish settlers in the region imported the technique of constructing walls from adobe blocks bonded with mud mortar of similar composition. Traditional adobe blocks were composed of clay and sand mixed with water, the stability of which was intrinsic to the clay-to-sand ratio of the native soil, and might also have included straw or grass added as a binder.<sup>15</sup> Adobe walls are generally very thick and possess very high thermal mass. The most prevalent examples of this type of adobe block construction are the Sonoran

row houses of the historic El Presidio and Barrio Viejo neighborhoods.

Adobe continues to be an ideal building material for desert residences because of its high thermal mass. Modern adobe is typically stabilized with Portland cement or asphalt. Unfortunately, adobe production is labor intensive and relatively few people have experience with the material. This has made the cost of adobe prohibitive for many. However, adobe has inspired a number of alternatives over the years. Burnt adobe, or *adobe quemado*, is fired adobe block that is a more stable alternative to traditional adobe block.<sup>14</sup> Its stabilized condition allows it to be laid by masons in the same way as traditional clay brick. Slump block, also popular in the region, is a type of concrete masonry unit that is allowed to slump before completely curing, in order to create a modern block that is visually similar to native adobe but without the advantage of thermal mass. Slump block was used heavily in the post-war housing boom to create mass-produced homes that referred to the traditional buildings of the region. Clay brick has relatively high thermal mass if used in two courses and was a prominent

component in Tucson's early 20th-century built landscape.

Rammed earth provides yet another material with high thermal mass that has been used throughout the world for centuries and regionally by the Hohokam. Modern rammed earth is a mixture of soils and a small amount of Portland cement and is packed either by hand or by hydraulic tampers. It is very expressive in form due to its rough texture and the striations formed by the tamping process.<sup>15</sup> Rammed earth's monolithic appearance and its high thermal mass make it an appropriate material for the cultural and climactic conditions of southern Arizona. Rammed earth has been popularized in this region by the highly publicized work of architect Rick Joy. It can best be witnessed in his Convent Avenue Studios and Rick Joy Studio (fig. 7.5). In these two projects, Joy successfully uses rammed earth construction to create a forward-thinking architecture that blends with and enhances its historic surroundings in the Barrio Viejo, one of Tucson's oldest neighborhoods. As with adobe, however, the high cost of rammed earth construction, due to increased labor and material in the form work, has limited its use in the region.

Finally, straw bale is another material that is relatively new to southern Arizona but has been used in other regions for hundred of years. Straw bale construction uses the bales as masonry units, and can be either load-bearing or infill. Straw is highly insulative and, as straw bales are an agricultural waste product, it is inexpensive to procure. Although straw bales are not a traditional component of building in this region, they successfully mix with native materials such as mud and lime, as evidenced by the historic use of loose straw as a binder in earthen blocks and plasters.<sup>16</sup> One of Tucson's most avid proponents of straw bale construction is architect Paul Weiner. His Harding House is a simple straw bale construction that reflects the historic transitional style

with a square form, corner porch, pyramidal roof, simple window and door openings, and a plaster finish.<sup>17</sup> The house fits seamlessly into its historic context.

More modern materials inspired by adobe construction include Rastra block and the Integra wall system. Rastra blocks have a hollow core and are made of recycled polystyrene and Portland cement. Because the blocks contain recycled polystyrene, they are much lighter than traditional concrete blocks, and can be laid by virtually anyone. After laying the blocks, the voids are filled in with cement and tied together with steel reinforcing for lateral support.<sup>18</sup> These blocks are good insulators, but possess little thermal mass. A local example of Rastra block construction is the studio of architects Luis Ibarra and Teresa Rosano in the Grant Rd./Glenn St. neighborhood. Integra block is another material that is gaining popularity in the area. The Integra wall system comprises concrete masonry units that are typically open at both ends. Reducing the web in the core of each block minimizes thermal bridging.<sup>19</sup> Integra block was used by Arthur Perkins for the design of 15th Street Studios, a small infill-housing complex that includes live/work spaces for artists and private and public courtyards.

In the Spanish Colonial period, the roofs of adobe structures were composed of timber beams, called vigas, supporting cactus rib lathing, called *latillas*. The lathing was covered with a layer of readily available earth. However, due to material instability, imported alternatives such as milled lumber and sheet metal were later welcomed. Corrugated galvanized iron, referred to locally as "tin" and pitched roofs became more effective choices for waterproof roofing at the end of the 19th century.<sup>20</sup> The increased expense of resources, both economically and environmentally, makes a return to timber roofs impractical.<sup>21</sup> Because of its durability and aesthetic qualities,

the use of sheet metal has experienced a renewed popularity. While the Wilder House mentioned above uses corrugated tin as a traditional roofing material, the Barrio Metalico complex designed by Rob Paulus has taken it a step further (fig. 7.6). All of the free-standing, loft-style units are faced with corrugated metal.

Despite differences of materials, techniques, and design methodologies, the architects discussed here are united by the realization that architecture and place are inexorably linked. As it becomes more evident that our natural and cultural resources are not infinite, more architects will come to embrace local materials and traditions. These Tucson architects are innovators precisely because they have been willing to look

past the often superficial thrill of “newness” to traditional, undeservedly neglected materials and techniques that help to create an architecture in harmony with the specific local conditions of climate and culture.

#### ENDNOTES

1. Anne M. Nequette and R. Brooks Jeffery, *A Guide to Tucson Architecture* (Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 2002), 38.
2. James D. Miller, “Landscape Architecture for Arid Zones,” *Desert Housing: Balancing Experience and Technology for Dwelling in Hot Arid Zones* (Tucson: University of Arizona, Office of Arid Lands Studies, 1980), 17.

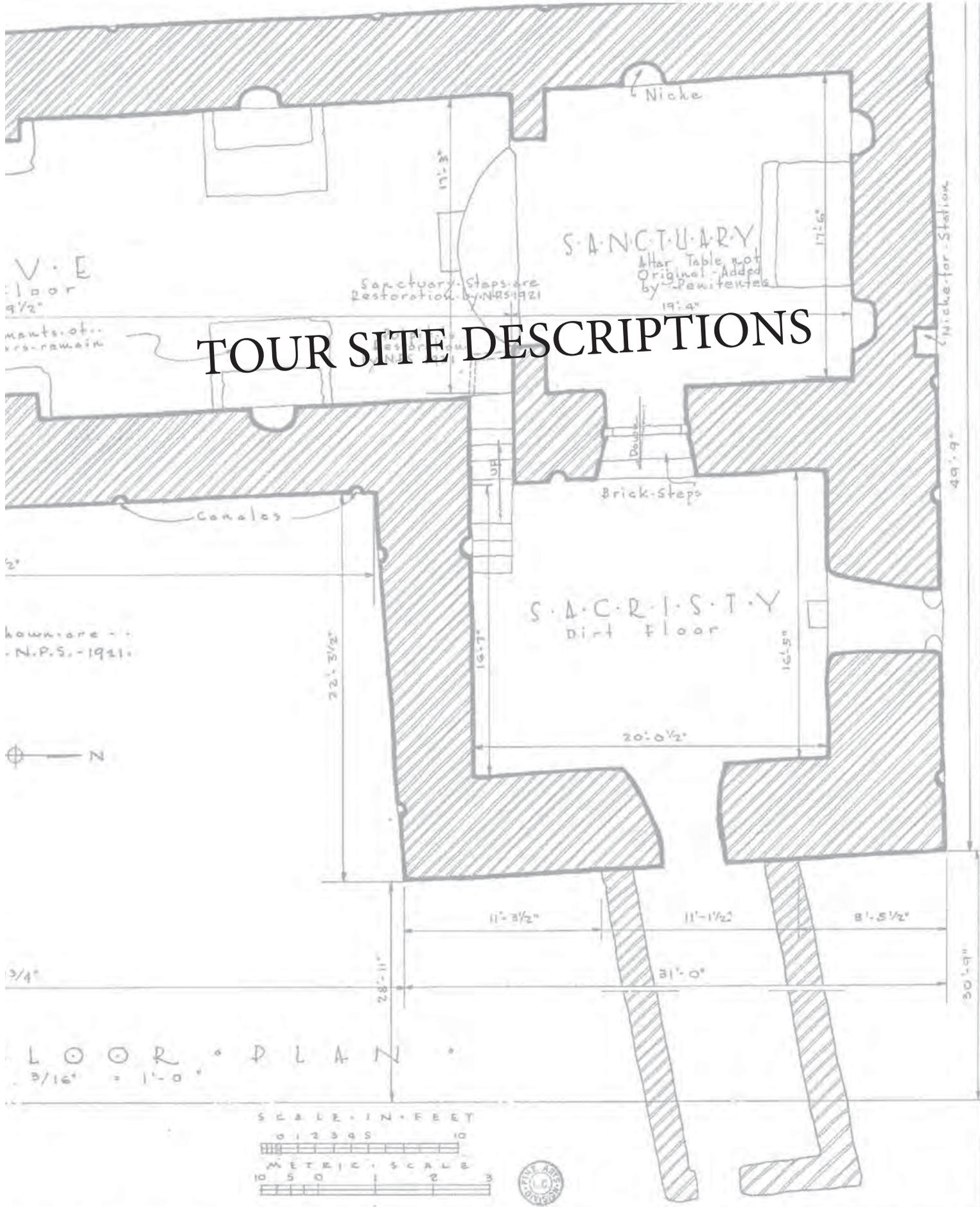


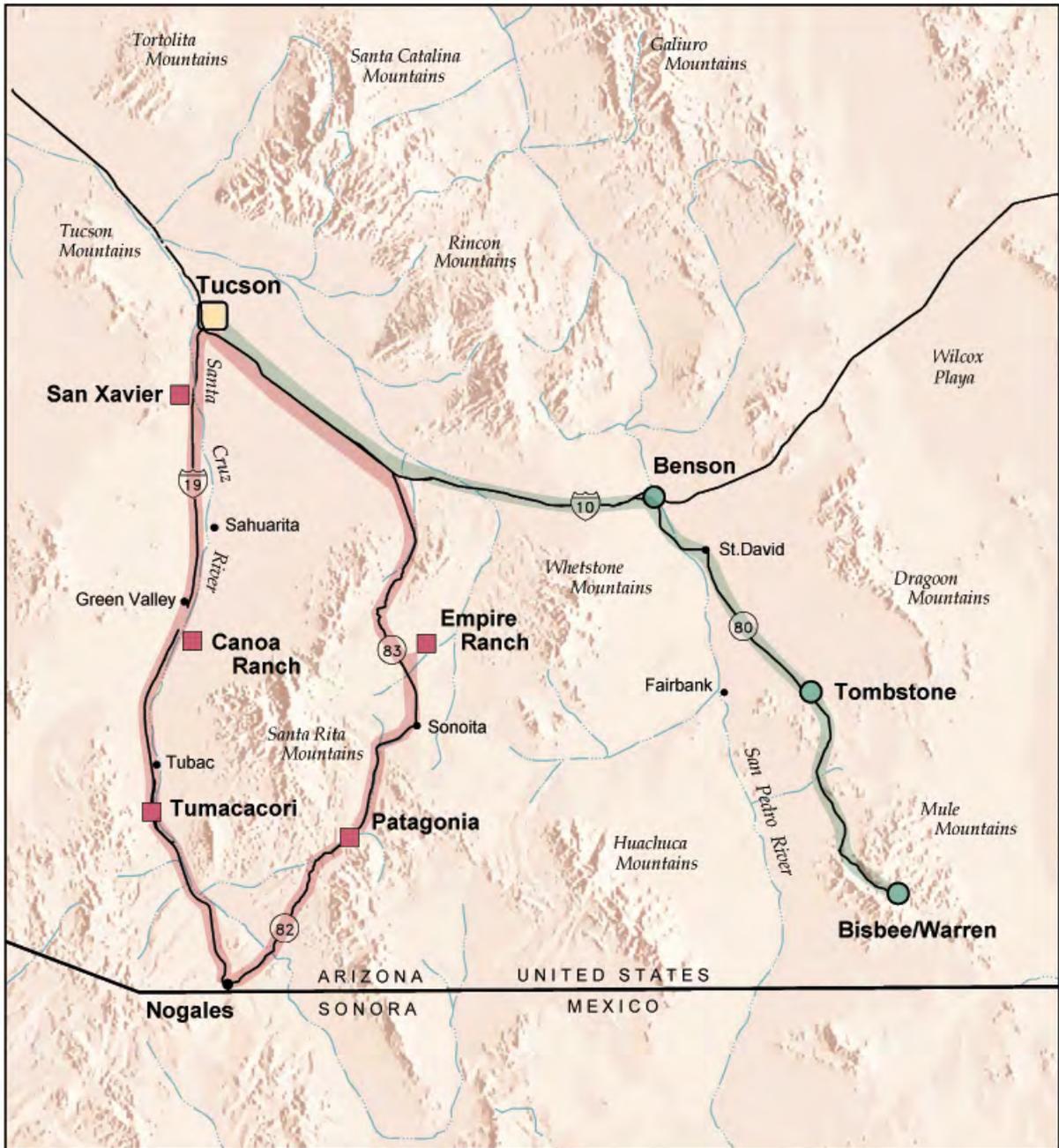
*Fig. 7.6 – Barrio Metalico, Tucson by Rob Paulus, 2004 reflects its industrial setting through the use of salvaged galvanized steel panels that give way to a finer metal finish on the individual loft interiors. Courtesy of Michael Lovato*

3. Robert Vint, *Vernacular Housing Design and Technology: A Guide to Building in the U.S. Southwest* (US Department of Housing and Urban Development, Draft of forthcoming publication), 74.
4. Helen J. Kessler, "In the Solar Vanguard," *Fine Homebuilding* (October/November 1982), 29.
5. Nequette and Jeffery, *A Guide to Tucson Architecture*, 267.
6. Vint, *Vernacular Housing Design and Technology*, 27-28.
7. Allen Freeman, "Reinterpreting Regionalism: Arizona," *Architecture Record* (March 1984), 113.
8. Caroline S. Murray, "For Two Busy People: A \$16,225 House for a Difficult Climate," *House Beautiful* (October 1962), 201.
9. Vint, *Vernacular Housing Design and Technology*, 74.
10. *Ibid.*, 71.
11. *Ibid.*, 110.
12. Nequette and Jeffery, *A Guide to Tucson Architecture*, 268.
13. de Teel Patterson Tiller, "Preservation of Historic Adobe Buildings," *Preservation Briefs* 5 (1978).
14. Vint, *Vernacular Housing Design and Technology*, 111-112.
15. *Ibid.*, 115.
16. *Ibid.*, 121.
17. Nequette and Jeffery, *A Guide to Tucson Architecture*, 122.
18. "Rastra: The Environmentally Friendly Solution," <http://www.rastra.net/rastracom/web-site/index2.htm>.
19. "Integra Wall Systems," <http://www.integrawall.com>.
20. Vint, *Vernacular Housing Design and Technology*, 63.
21. *Ibid.*, 138.



# TOUR SITE DESCRIPTIONS





**Southeastern Arizona Key Map**

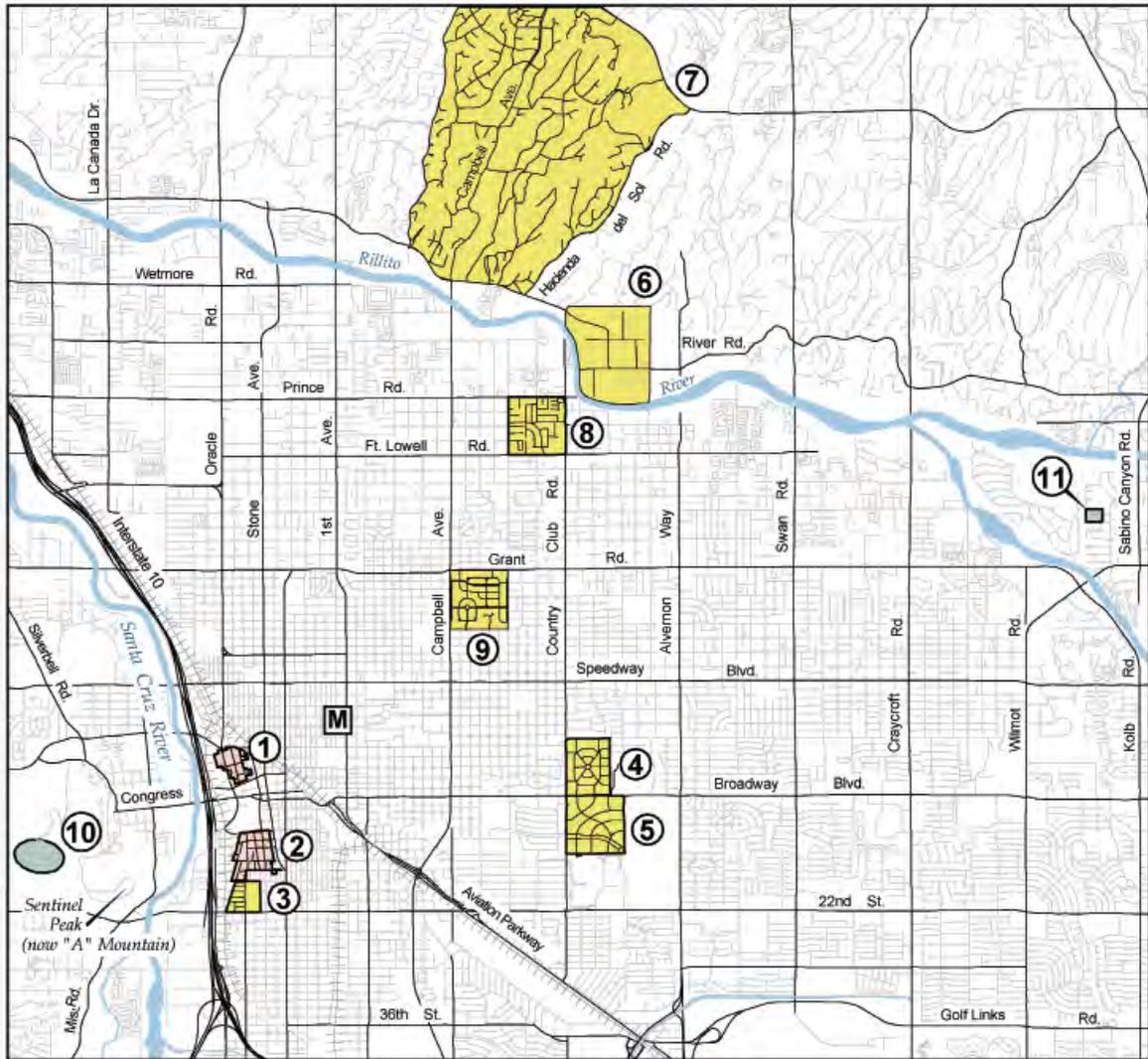
- Thursday SE Arizona Tour
- Friday Optional Mining Tour



N

Miles  
0 10

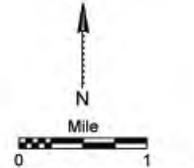
Desert Archaeology, Inc. 2005



### Tucson Key Map

Tucson, Pima County, Arizona

- |  |  |
|--|--|
|  20th Century Residential Landscapes Tour |  Tumamoc Hill and University Indian Ruin Tour |
|  Marriott Hotel                           |  Hope VI/Santa Rosa                             |
|  Friday Morning Tour                      |  El Encanto                                     |
|  El Presidio                              |  Colonia Solana                                 |
|  Barrio Viejo                             |  Binghampton                                    |
|  |  Catalina Foothills Estates                     |
|  |  Winterhaven                                    |
|  |  Catalina Vista                                 |
|  |  Tumamoc Hill                                 |
|  |  University Indian Ruin                       |



 Desert Archaeology, Inc. 2005



---

# SAN XAVIER DEL BAC

John Messina

With a loan of 7,000 pesos from a Spanish settler, the construction of the current mission church of San Xavier del Bac, a superb example of frontier Baroque architecture, was begun in approximately 1781 by Father Juan Bautista Velderrain, a Basque Franciscan (fig. 8.1). The church was completed in 1797 under Father Juan Bautista Llorens. The Franciscans, who had replaced the Jesuits in the Pimería Alta upon the latter's expulsion from New Spain in 1767, at first made use of an existing adobe-walled, flat-roofed church, with side chapels, built around 1760 and located just west of the current structure. During the early 1800s, the earlier church was demolished, and some of its materials were used in the construction of the existing convento wing located on the



*Fig. 8.1 – Mission church San Xavier del Bac from the southwest. Courtesy of John Messina, Southwest Center, University of Arizona.*

east side of the present church. The eastern bell tower was never completed, probably due to lack of funds.

The master builder, or *maestro albañil*, of the current church was Ignacio Gaona who also is known to have built another church in the Pimería Alta at the mission site of Caborca, Sonora.<sup>1</sup> Construction labor was provided by Tohono O’odham Indians and the decorative sculptures and paintings were crafted by artisans, brought from Central Mexico, whose names have long since been lost. The exterior walls of San Xavier, as the church at Bac is generally called by Tucsonans, is constructed of an outer and inner layer of low-fired clay bricks with rubble stone and lime slurry filling the core of each wall. The walls bear on rubble stone foundations, also grouted with a lime-and-sand mortar.

There are two lime-plastered towers, only one with a dome and lantern, flanking the decorative, earth-toned facade. The west tower is approximately 80’ in height. An unusual feature for the Pimería Alta is the balcony protruding from above the entrance portal, as well as the two smaller flanking balconies at the second level of each tower. Since the central balcony can be accessed from the choir loft, it may have been used as a



*Fig. 8.2 – Facade of San Xavier del Bac showing sculpted frontispiece surrounding the portal. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*



Fig. 8.3 – Photograph of San Xavier del Bac in 1887, shortly after an earthquake. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (B89870)

place from which to address a gathering in the forecourt below, but there is hardly room enough on it to hold services or say mass. The reason for its existence remains a mystery.

The portal on the south elevation is surrounded by a sculpted frontispiece (fig. 8.2).<sup>2</sup> At the very top of the composition, in the dip of the crest, a statue of Saint Francis Xavier once stood. The scallop shell, symbol of *Santiago* (Saint James the Greater) and a common motif on churches in the Pimería Alta, is placed over the balcony doorway leading to the choir loft. In the niches, beginning on the upper left and moving clockwise, appear statues of Saints Elizabeth of Hungary, Cecilia, Lucia, and Barbara. Also included in the upper portion of the frontispiece are various coats of

arms and the lions of Castile, as well as a cat and a mouse.

The church did not have its overall white appearance until a Bishop Henry Granjon of the Tucson Diocese covered the exterior with white plaster, among other repair and rebuilding projects he oversaw between 1905 and 1907. Until then the exterior of the church, as seen in 19th century photographs, had either a mud plaster coating or no covering at all (fig 8.3).

The plan of the church (fig. 8.4) is cruciform and is covered by five shallow *bovedas* (domes), two over the nave, one over each of the two side chapels, and a fifth over the sanctuary. There is a hemispherical dome above the crossing and a small lantern dome over the sacristy. The thrust from each dome is received by both lateral arches

and the exterior walls. The total interior length from the entrance to the rear of the sanctuary is approximately 99'. The nave is 21.5' wide and the transept arms are approximately 20' deep feet and 21.5' wide. The height of the nave, from the floor to the highest point of the flat domes, is 34', that from the floor to the apex of the dome over the crossing is slightly more than 53'.

The interior of San Xavier, arguably the most spectacular aspect of the church, is richly decorated with brightly painted relief sculpture, wall paintings, and statuary (fig 8.5). According to historian Bernard Fontana, more than one

hundred saints, the Virgin Mary, and no less than 182 angels are present within the building. The church is further adorned with painted portraits as well as scenes depicting the history of Christianity from the Old Testament until the late 16th century, when the Turkish fleet was defeated by Christian forces in the naval battle of Lepanto.

Islamic influence can also be found throughout the church. For example, the motif of a lambréquin, or drapery fringe, with small bells and pomegranates, is painted on the side walls just below the high cornice that runs along the nave.

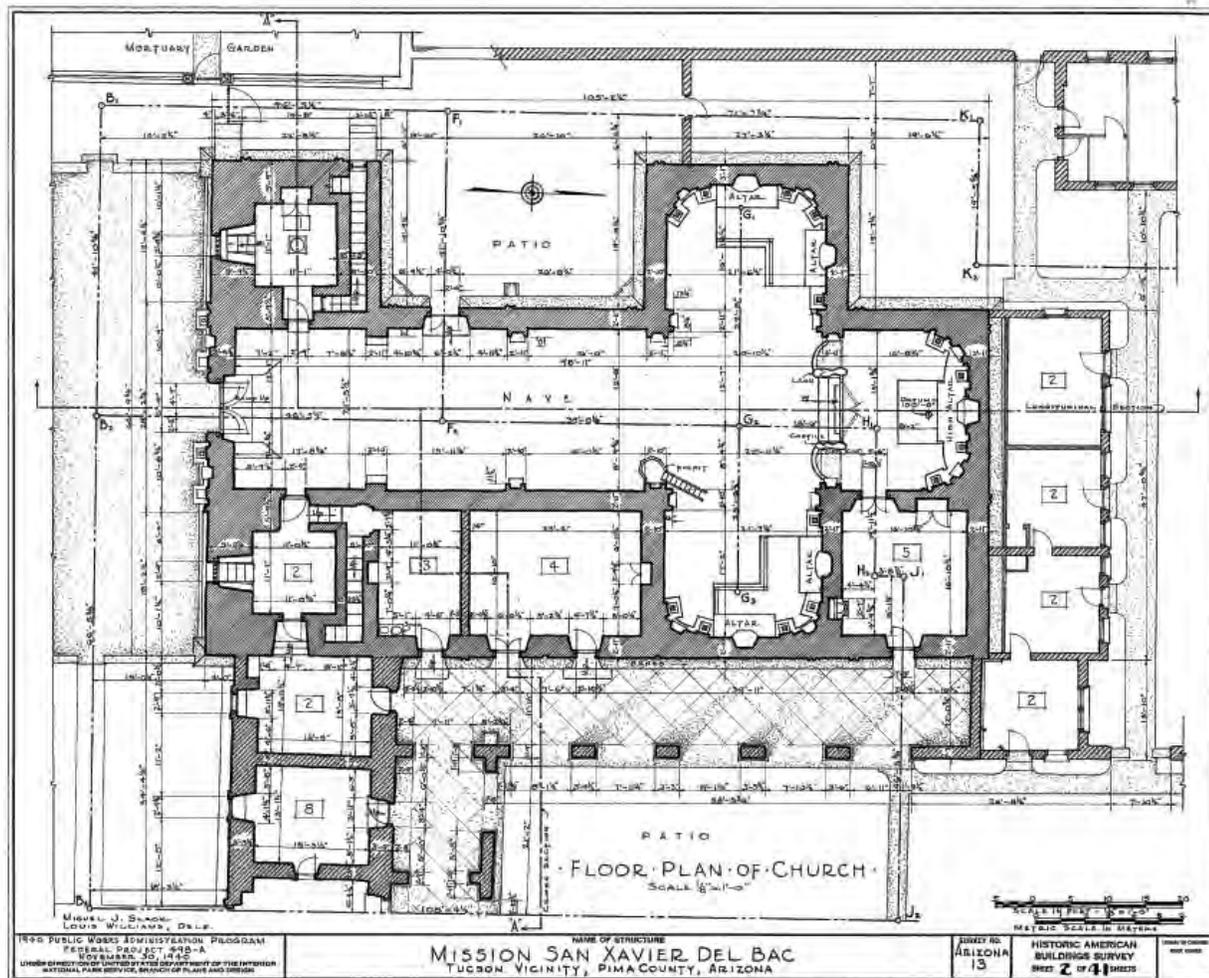


Fig. 8.4 – Plan of San Xavier del Bac drawn in 1940 for the Historic American Building Survey. North is to the right. Courtesy of Historic American Buildings Survey, Library of Congress

This type of image represents the decoration used at the entrance to the tents of powerful Arab chiefs, and the pomegranate is an Islamic symbol connoting royalty. The scallop shell, while symbolizing both Saint James and the Christian pilgrimage to Santiago de Compostela, also represents the *hajj*, or Muslim holy trip to Mecca.<sup>5</sup>

The main altarpiece, or *retablo mayor*, represents a conception of heaven with the Virgin Mary of the Immaculate Conception standing in the upper niche and Saint Francis Xavier at the center of the composition (fig 8.6). Flanking these figures, in clockwise order beginning at the upper left, are Saints Peter, Paul, Andrew, and either Simon or John the Evangelist. At the peak of the composition is God the Father, flanked by

Cain on the left and Abel on the right. Pilasters with stacked sections including the inverted obelisk-like elements known as *colpites*, indicators of the Mexican Ultra-baroque style, frame these figures, even though Neoclassicism has already taken hold in Central Mexico at the time of San Xavier's construction.

The eastern transept arm contains a statue of the *Mater Dolorosa*, the Sorrowing Mother of Christ, in the central niche of the lower level. Directly above are figures of the Virgin Mary (again) on the left and Saint John on the right. Flanking these statues, in clockwise order beginning from upper left, are Saint Benedict, the Moor of Palermo, the Blessed Bernardino of Feltre, Saint Anthony of Padua, and Saint Didacus Diego of



Fig. 8.5 – Interior of San Xavier del Bac, looking toward the altar. Courtesy of John Messina, Southwest Center, University of Arizona.

Alcala. At the very top of the retablo, from left to right, are Saints Elizabeth of Portugal, Clare of Assisi, and Elizabeth of Hungary. Once again, *estípite* pilasters frame the figures.

The western transept arm, known as the Chapel of the *Ecce Homo*, includes a statue of the thorn-crowned Christ, as well as eleven saints and two large paintings on the south side. The lower painting depicts Our Lady of the Pillar with Saint James the Greater kneeling. Located in the oval frame at the far left of the upper tier of this chapel is a relief of Saint Gertrude. She and three other female saints in this transept arm have had their faces and hands over painted in brown in order to give them the appearance of being Indian. A statue of Saint Dominic is positioned in the middle of the north wall. At his feet is a dog carved from wood, representing the members of the Dominican Order who were known as “the hounds of the Lord.”

The experience of seeing the mission church San Xavier from a distance across the mesquite- and saguaro-filled landscape can only be equaled by the experience of entering the narthex under the compression of the choir loft, and then witnessing, for the first time, the polychromatic adornment that radiates from the walls and ceiling of the church. The magnificent sculptural presence of San Xavier del Bac in the Sonoran Desert landscape, its interior spaces, and its extraordinary decorative sculpture were used as a means to awe the indigenous people of the region into an acceptance of the mission system and Christianity.

Since 1993, both the exterior surfaces and interior decoration of San Xavier have been undergoing stabilization and restoration.



*Fig. 8.6 – Interior of San Xavier del Bac showing the retablo mayor. Courtesy of John Messina, Southwest Center, University of Arizona.*

The harmful cement plaster and other impermeable coatings used during the 20th century are being removed and a traditional protective covering of lime and sand plaster, along with a bonding agent of nopal cactus, is being applied to all walls, roofs, and domes. The workers whom you may see high up on the exterior scaffolding are from the Morales Construction Company, a family business that has been maintaining San Xavier for several generations.

Today the mission church San Xavier del Bac serves as a parish church on the Tohono O'odham Reservation, where it continues to astonish both native and non-native alike with its beauty and spiritual presence. It is currently listed on the National Register of Historic Places.

#### ENDNOTES

1 Mardith Schuetz-Miller and Bernard L. Fontana, "Mission Churches of Northern Sonora" in *The Pimería Alta*, ed. James E. Officer, et al. (Tucson: Southwestern Mission Research Center, 1996), 90-95.

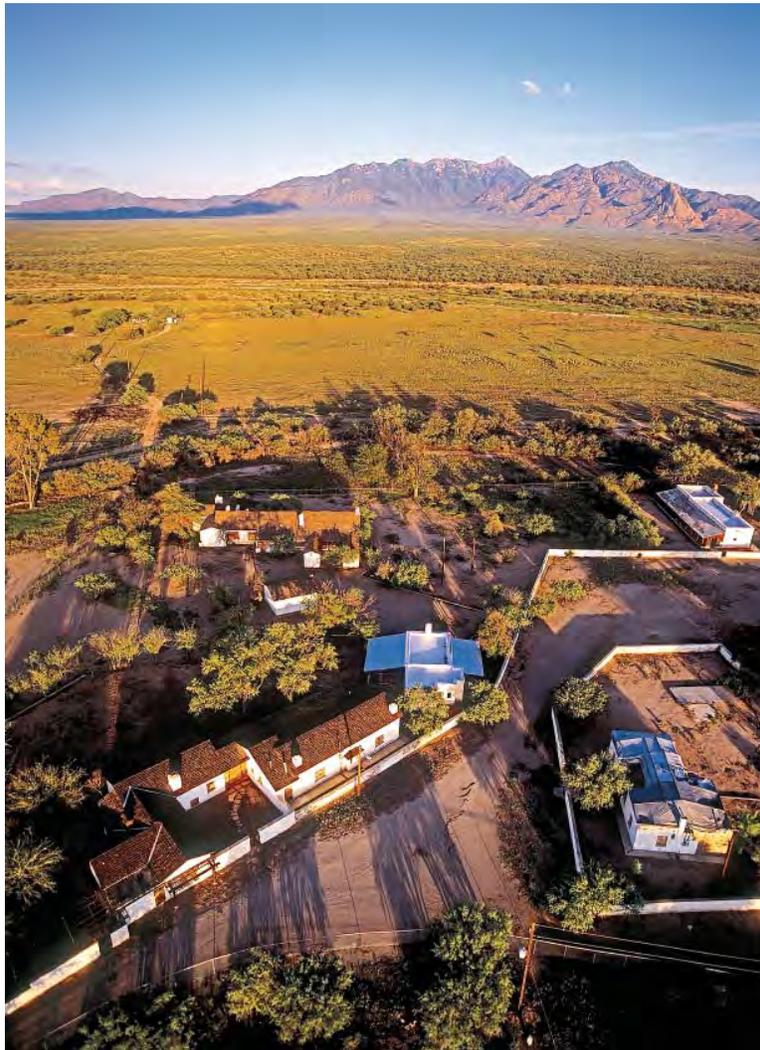
2, It must be noted that the identification of the iconography of San Xavier's decoration, inside and out, that is presented here is based on the extraordinary research of anthropologist and historian, Bernard L. Fontana. See "Biography of a Desert Church: The Story of Mission San Xavier del Bac," *The Smoke Signal* 3 (1996, revised) and "The Hidden Artwork of Mission San Xavier," *Arizona Highways* (October 2003): 18-33.

3. Jorge Olvera, "San Xavier Del Bac: Spanish Mission or Moslem Mosque?" *Dove of the Desert* (Winter, 1989).

*"... the Mission of San Xavier del Bac, the "white dove of the desert," is, without quibble, the most beautiful man-made object in America Deserta. Whoever dubbed it "the Queen of Sonora" must have known that no one would dare quarrel—unlike the stately gothic piles that elbow for pre-eminence as "the cathedral of the Fen-land" in my ancestral part of England, San Xavier del Bac is without equals or rivals, even among the other mission foundations of Padre Kino."*  
*Reyner Banham, Scenes In America Deserta*

---

# 9



*Fig. 9.1 – Aerial view, Canoa Ranch looking east with the Santa Cruz River in the near background. © Adriel Heisey, (AZ 15-5469-27)*

---

# CANOA RANCH

Josephine Antoinette Hilliard

**L**a Canoa is part of the history of land grant claims in the Southwest.<sup>1</sup> The initial land grant, San Ignacio de la Canoa, was made to Tomás and Ignacio Ortiz. In 1820 the two brothers initiated their claim to Canoa according to prevailing Spanish land law. On December 15, 1821, in Arizpe, Sonora, the Ortiz brothers made a successful bid, although no copy of an original title has been found. It has been theorized that no title was issued because of the overthrow of the Spanish government in Mexico in 1821 or that the title may have been issued but later lost in a fire in Tubac, as claimed by an Ortiz heir.<sup>2</sup>

Frederick Maish and Thomas Driscoll purchased La Canoa from Ortiz heirs in 1876. Little is known of Driscoll. Maish came to Arizona in 1869 and shortly afterwards entered into partnership with Driscoll. An 1890s letterhead proudly announced the partners as “proprietors of the Canoa, Fresnal and Deep Well Ranches, and Canoa and Buena Vista Land Grants.”<sup>3</sup>

In order to establish claim to Canoa, Maish and Driscoll filed an initial Petition of Claimants and in February 1880 its approval was recommended. For years Congress failed to act. Finally, in 1893 the Canoa Claim was referred to the U. S. Court of Private Land Claims. Two maps were introduced. Both supported a claim of almost 47,000 acres, rather than the original four *sitos*,<sup>4</sup> and a mandate dated October 1897 awarded 46,696 acres to Maish and Driscoll. It was later reversed, with a final award of 17,208 acres being confirmed on February 15, 1899.

The present Canoa Ranch headquarters lies a mile north of the original La Canoa site at the terminus of the canal that had been planned to bring water to Tucson. In October 1887 articles of incorporation for the Canoa Canal Company stated the plan “to

construct a main canal from a point on the Santa Cruz River . . . on or near the southern boundary of the Mexican Land Claim known as the 'Canoa' and from there in a northerly direction down the Santa Cruz Valley and to the City of Tucson . . .”<sup>5</sup>

### Development of ranch operations during the Manning era

In 1912, Levi H. Manning purchased the Canoa land grant. Four years later he sold the northern half of the land to Intercontinental Rubber Company for a wartime experiment in the raising of guayule as a substitute for rubber. He was able to acquire lands adjacent to the southern portion to bring the ranch lands to 100,000 acres or 500,000 acres when private land, state trust lands,

and federal grazing permits in the Santa Cruz and Altar valleys were totaled. Manning began a scientific breeding program to improve the quality of the cattle on the ranch, introducing purebred Hereford bulls into his cattle herd.

In 1921, Levi Manning’s son, Howell Manning, Sr., took over management of the ranch. Irrigation was installed for growing crops; two pit silos were built, each holding 2,500 tons of feed; and the range was fenced and a program of pasture rotation implemented. The Canoa became known for its fine Arabian horses. At its peak the ranch employed 40-45 ranch hands with ten families living permanently on the ranch. It had a school for ranch children, a blacksmith shop, welding shop, barns, sheds, corrals, and 1,200 acres of irrigated



Fig. 9.2 – Site plan, Canoa Ranch. Courtesy of Poster Frost Associates, Inc.

- Key**
- |                             |                                   |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| ① The Long House (See Plan) | ⑥ Foreman’s House                 |
| ② The Big House (See Plan)  | ⑦ Storage Shed                    |
| ③ Guest House               | ⑧ Blacksmith Shop and Schoolhouse |
| ④ Servant’s Quarters        | ⑨ Feed Storage and Stables        |
| ⑤ Bunkhouse                 | ⑩ Corrals                         |
- 0 50 100 200  
Scale

pasture. The depth of the canal head was expanded to tap underground water and several deep wells were drilled to supplement flow from the Santa Cruz. Also built was the longest feeding troughs in the nation—one-third mile long with a capacity to feed 1,500 head at one feeding.

In its site layout, the entry drive of Canoa Ranch marks a clear distinction between its Hispanic vernacular buildings to the southwest and the American architect-designed ranch houses to the

northeast. Most of the residences, one major utility building, and the compound walls are of adobe, reflecting a strong Sonoran influence. Two later buildings are simple examples of the Spanish Colonial revival style. Tucson architect John W. Smith designed the Ranch-style home, known as “The Big House,” in 1935 for Howell Manning, Sr. and his second wife (fig. 9.3). Smith received recognition for his design in the August 1937 issue of *Architectural Forum*. The award was for

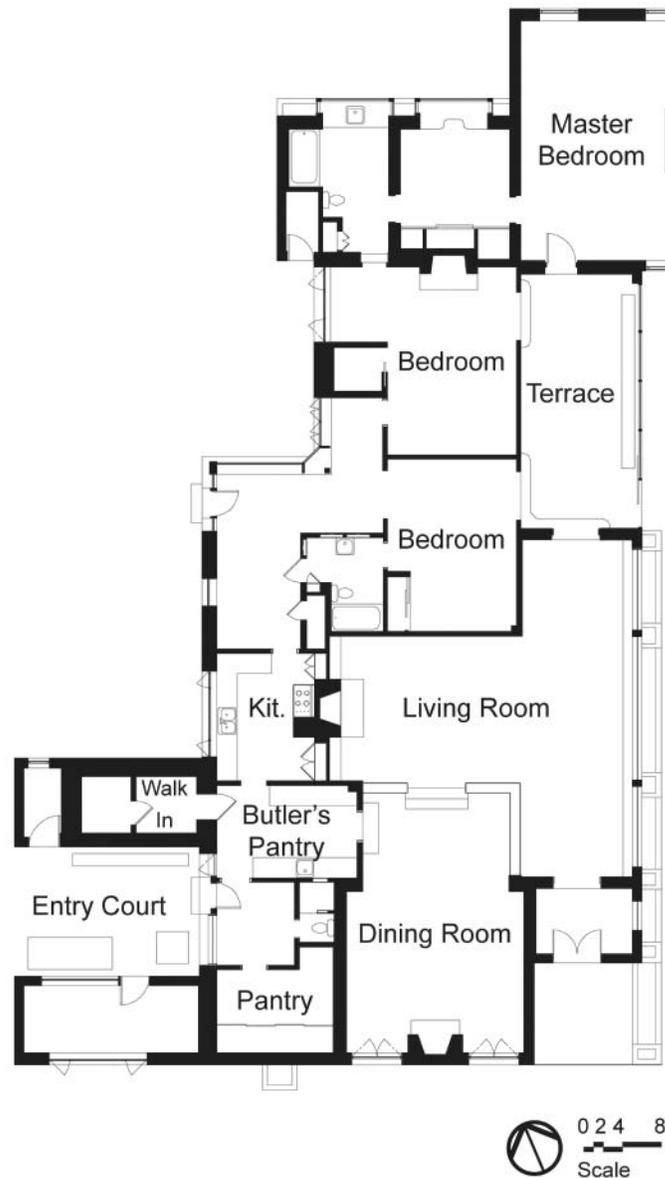


Fig. 9.5 – Plan of the “Big House” or Howell Manning Sr. Family House, Canoa Ranch. Courtesy of Poster Frost Associates, Inc.

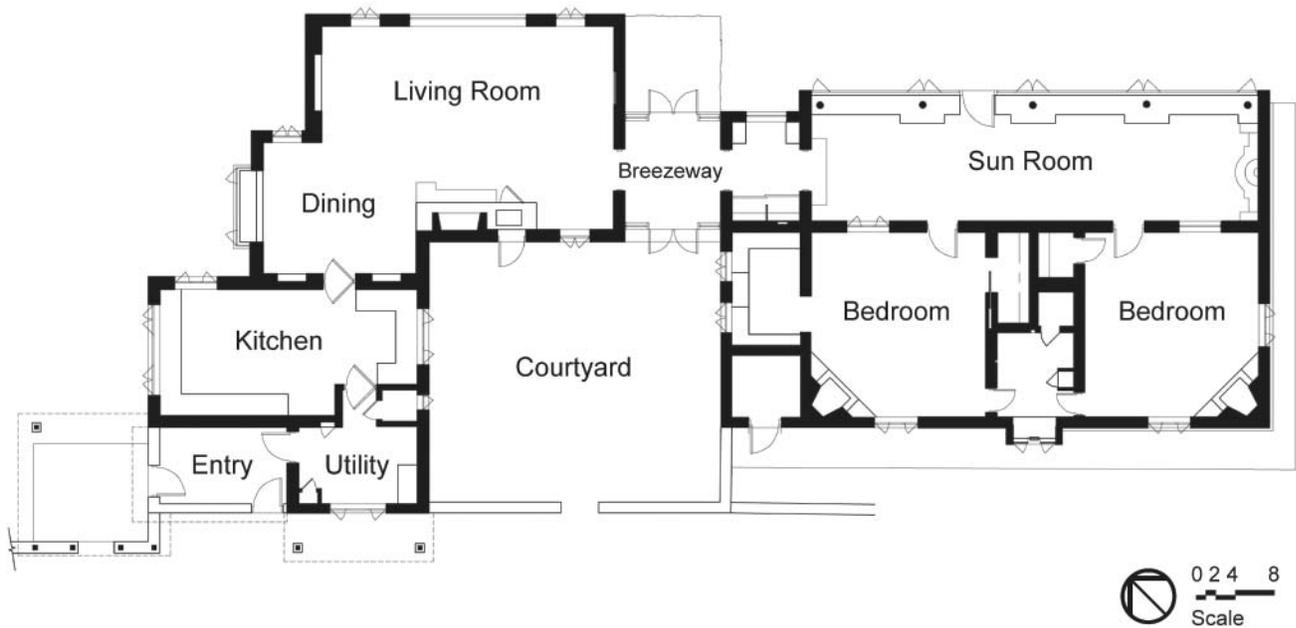
*Fig 9.4 - The "Big House" or Howell Manning Sr. Family House, Canoa Ranch, published in Architectural Forum (August 1957). Courtesy of Statistical Research Inc.*



the creative use of glass in the narrow glazed terrace on the east face (fig. 9.4).

The building has white-painted, stuccoed, adobe walls and wood shake gabled roofs. A shed extension incorporates the vestibule and terrace. The main south entry has a pair of tongue-in-groove plank doors. The kitchen entry and breakfast room entries have original single-panel, single-light doors. Windows are wood frame, fixed, or casement types. Unique, large, single-pane casements flank the marble-clad fireplace on the south wall in the sunken dining room. Likewise, the focus of the T-shaped living room is the west wall central fireplace. Alterations may have created the unusual shape of the living room as seen today. The wood tongue-and-groove flooring of the extension does not match the original. Possible post-1935 additions include the pair of gable-roofed extensions by the west kitchen entrance. Accessible from the kitchen and secured by six-inch thick wooden doors is a walk-in refrigerator/freezer, which has two rooms. The inaccessible second extension has large picture windows.

Facing the "Big House" is a second primary residence, known as the "Long House." It was formed from an original bedroom wing to which communal, food preparation, and utility spaces were added around an enclosed courtyard (fig. 9.5). The house was built in two stages. The two sons of Howell Manning, Sr. occupied the rectangular, gable-roofed, two-bedroom, one bathroom building incorporated into the south wing of the present house. An early photograph



*Fig. 9.5 – Plan of the “Long House” or Howell Manning, Jr. Family House, Canoa Ranch. Courtesy of Poster Froot Associates, Inc.*

*Fig 9.6 - The “Long House” or Howell Manning Jr. Family House, Canoa Ranch prior to the 1947 remodeling. Courtesy of Louise Manning-Catron.*

shows the original building had a shed-roofed east porch supported by rustic tree posts (fig. 9.6).

According to Deezie Manning-Catron, in 1948 a second wing was designed by Smith to create a functional residence for her and her new husband, Howell Manning, Jr. The addition included a breezeway connection, living-dining room, kitchen, and utility room. The former porch was enclosed to create a sunroom as well as an interior passageway. A dressing room and outdoor storage space were added adjacent to the north bedroom. The construction was configured to enclose a west courtyard. Interior partitions were

largely adobe. The main entry is into the narrow breezeway, which features matching door assemblies on the east and west walls. Each assemblage consists of a pair of double doors, custom made on the ranch by Frank Robles,<sup>6</sup> with an upper and lower glass panel and wood spindles built inside the glass, plus flanking sidelights. There is a tri-part transom above. The windows are steel sash and include picture, casement, and bay types. An exposed diagonal beam spans between corners of the living room and dining room walls. Exposed, heavy, rough-sawn, ceiling framing members appear in both spaces. These timbers are pine from Mt. Lemmon, north of Tucson.<sup>7</sup>

A variety of architectural styles was employed in the ancillary buildings and structures. The adobe buildings evidencing a linear plan and flat facade and roof have been influenced by a strong Sonoran history. That they also make use of industrial elements introduced by settlers from the eastern United States classifies them as “Transitional.” The foreman’s residence is a prime example. Later pitched-roof employees’ dwellings are examples of American vernacular types built of adobe, while the guesthouse and an employee’s residence exhibit elements of the Spanish Colonial Revival style. Most of what stands today appear to be the work of Howell Manning, Sr., who became ranch manager in 1924 and owner

in 1935. In 1937 the barn and other livestock-related buildings apparently burned to the ground.<sup>8</sup>

The foreman’s house dates from the Levi Manning era or earlier with 18-inch thick, 15-foot high adobe walls speaking of the Sonoran-influenced Transitional style. On a long, linear plan, the stuccoed adobe building contains a living room, kitchen, and two bedrooms; it appears in Caton MacTavish’s 1925 article as one of several free-standing, “Mexican style” headquarters buildings. Two fireplaces, located in the living room and master bedroom, provide the only heat. Lacking internal passageways, the building is often mistaken for a bunkhouse. A photograph in the MacTavish article shows a typical ramada, supported by 8”-diameter tree trunks and roofed with thatch of native plants, on the north side of the building. The screened, shed-roofed porch with its concrete floor is a later addition. The bunkhouse, built between 1948 and 1955, is a marked departure in its use of burnt adobe. On a linear plan with side gables, it features a corrugated metal roof with overhang, steel casement windows with concrete lintels and sills, and two front doors.

One of the earliest buildings is the blacksmith shop and schoolhouse (fig. 9.7).<sup>9</sup> This Transitional building is a U-shaped structure composed of spaces arranged in linear fashion around a shed-



*Fig. 9.7 – Blacksmith shop and schoolhouse, Canoa Ranch. The structure on the left is probably the school. Courtesy of Poster Frost Associates, Inc.*

roofed east porch supported by a stripped-bark tree trunk post. On the southwest end is the open “equipment storage shed,” while on the south end of the east facade is the “employee’s residence addition.” Originally contained within were a large tack room on the south end and a blacksmith’s shop to its north. Two smaller storage rooms flank the porch. The largest chamber on the north was used at one time to store salt.

Livestock-related structures and features include corrugated roof shelters, corrals, adobe walls, pastures, and pit silos. Three principal techniques were used to construct the corral fences: ribbing, known locally as *retaque* or *estaque*, created by stacking tamarisk or mesquite wood horizontally between vertical posts; use of iron posts with attached horizontal rails or heavy timber posts with five 8” horizontal pipes, custom-spliced for bolting, attached; or erection of vertical members, such as railroad ties, which were attached to posts and stabilized by horizontal bands at midpoint and top.<sup>10</sup> The corrals were divided into numerous enclosures with narrow passageways for funneling livestock. One such

passageway leads to the squeeze chute, weigh station, and ramped loading chute.

The pit silos were constructed prior to 1924 but are not visible on the 1936 aerial photograph of the ranch. The pair measure about 300 feet long by 50 feet wide each, separated by a 50-foot wide median and, according to MacTavish, each held 2,500 tons of feed. Loaded with silage, the trenches were capped with soil and hay and wetted down to allow fermentation. When the silage was ready for use as feed, it was removed by wagon or truck from one end, working in steps to the other end.<sup>11</sup>

Among the irrigation-related features are the Canoa Canal, Canoa Lake, and the earthen reservoir (fig. 9.8). Dry today, the 5-acre Canoa Lake was located north of the headquarters complex. Caton MacTavish writes that the beauty of General Manning’s romantic Mexican hacienda was further enhanced by the canal that “terminates in a tree-enclosed lagoon and a fine grove of fruit and shade trees.”<sup>12</sup> The lake was surrounded with cottonwoods, stocked with fish, and became a magnet for migratory birds.



*Fig. 9.8 – The Canoa Canal, published in The Pure-Bred Herefords of the Canoa Ranch and Scotch Farms (MacTavish, 1924). The cottonwood-lined canal and the lake it fed are now dry. Courtesy of Statistical Research Inc.*

The construction date of the lake is uncertain, but the canal which emptied into the lake was built in 1893 or 1894. A little over one mile long and 50 feet wide and lined with numerous gates and turnouts, it was originally intended to continue to Tucson thirty miles away. A 2,500-foot extension of the canal is visible on the 1935 aerial photograph. The extension was apparently used to carry water to agricultural fields. The head of the canal was excavated into a low river terrace south of the headquarters in order to tap a water-bearing soil layer that had been recognized as a reliable source of water since at least the 18th century. Julius S. Andrews, builder of the canal, states that it was 26' deep at its head, gradually tapering to 2' deep.<sup>13</sup> With the building of later projects in the area of the canal head it is difficult to tell where the ground surface was in the 1890s, but today the apparent canal head is 20' below the highest surrounding ground.

In the intervening years the property has undergone several changes in ownership. After Howell Manning, Jr. died in an automobile accident in 1951, his father, Howell, Sr., divided up and sold off most of the ranch. Like much property in the West the land has been bought and sold by corporations for speculative rather than ranching purposes. Pima County holds the remaining core of 4,600 acres.

#### ENDNOTES

1. Much of the information about Canoa Ranch presented here was gleaned from the following sources: Caton MacTavish's *The Pure-bred Herefords of the Canoa Ranch and Scotch Farms Tucson, Arizona* 1924 (Los Angeles: Young & McAllister, 1924); newspaper articles; Richard Willey's "La Canoa: A Spanish Land Grant Lost and Found," *Smoke Signal* 38 (Fall 1979): 154-72; Diana Hadley's "La Canoa: From Land Grant to Political Football," *SMRC-Newsletter* 34/123 (Summer 2000); and Janet Parkhurst.
2. Richard R. Willey, "La Canoa," 154.

3. F. Maish and Annie Maish Ochoa files, Arizona Historical Society, Tucson; quoted in Willey, "La Canoa," 162.
4. Four sitios = four square leagues = 17,353.84 acres.
5. B. Sachs Collection, Arizona Historical Foundation, Arizona State University Hayden Library, Tempe, item 1680; quoted in Willey, "La Canoa," 164.
6. According to Deezie Manning-Catron.
7. *Ibid.*
8. "Canoa Ranch Headquarters Historic District, Pima County, Arizona," National Register of Historic Places Multiple Property Documentation, sec. 7: 5.
9. *Ibid.*, sec. 7: 16.
10. *Ibid.*, sec. 7: 18.
11. *Ibid.*, sec. 7: 20.
12. MacTavish, *Pure-Bred Herefords*, 35.
13. "Canoa Ranch Headquarters Historic District," sec. 7: 19-20.
14. See Hadley article.

## Tequila

Tequila may be one of the most misconstrued of all libations. Infamous for the lick, suck, and slam ritual of salt, lime, and a shot glass, tequila is actually intended to be sipped and savored. What's more, the process of tequila's creation is every bit as imbued with history and tradition as that of wine or whiskey. So that you may truly enjoy tequila to the fullest, a brief overview of its origins and outcomes is in order.

Mexico is home to 136 species of a desert plant called agave, or maguey, a succulent identified by the fleshy, pointed leaves rising from its center. Mezcal is the distilled liquor of any agave. Tequila is mezcal produced from the fermented must of the blue agave (agave azul tequilana weber) and it takes its name from the highland region of central Mexico where it originated.

The ripeness of the blue agave is determined by the estimation of a jimador, a person whose primary focus is the heart of the agave, called the piña, which can weigh up to 200 pounds. Once in an agave's lifetime, it produces a flowering stem called a quiote that rises 25 to 40 feet into the air. By then, the agave is well past its prime for tequila production because the sugars that ferment into alcohol have been used up to produce the quiote. However, if harvested too soon, the piña will lack sufficient sugars.

At just the right moment, then, the jimador harvests the piñas and sends them off to the distillery where they are chopped and roasted until their starches turn into sugars. Subsequently, the roasted piñas are crushed and placed in fermenting vats. A yeast recipe, secret to each distiller, is then added to convert the sugars into alcohol, a process akin to that which occurs when brewing beer.

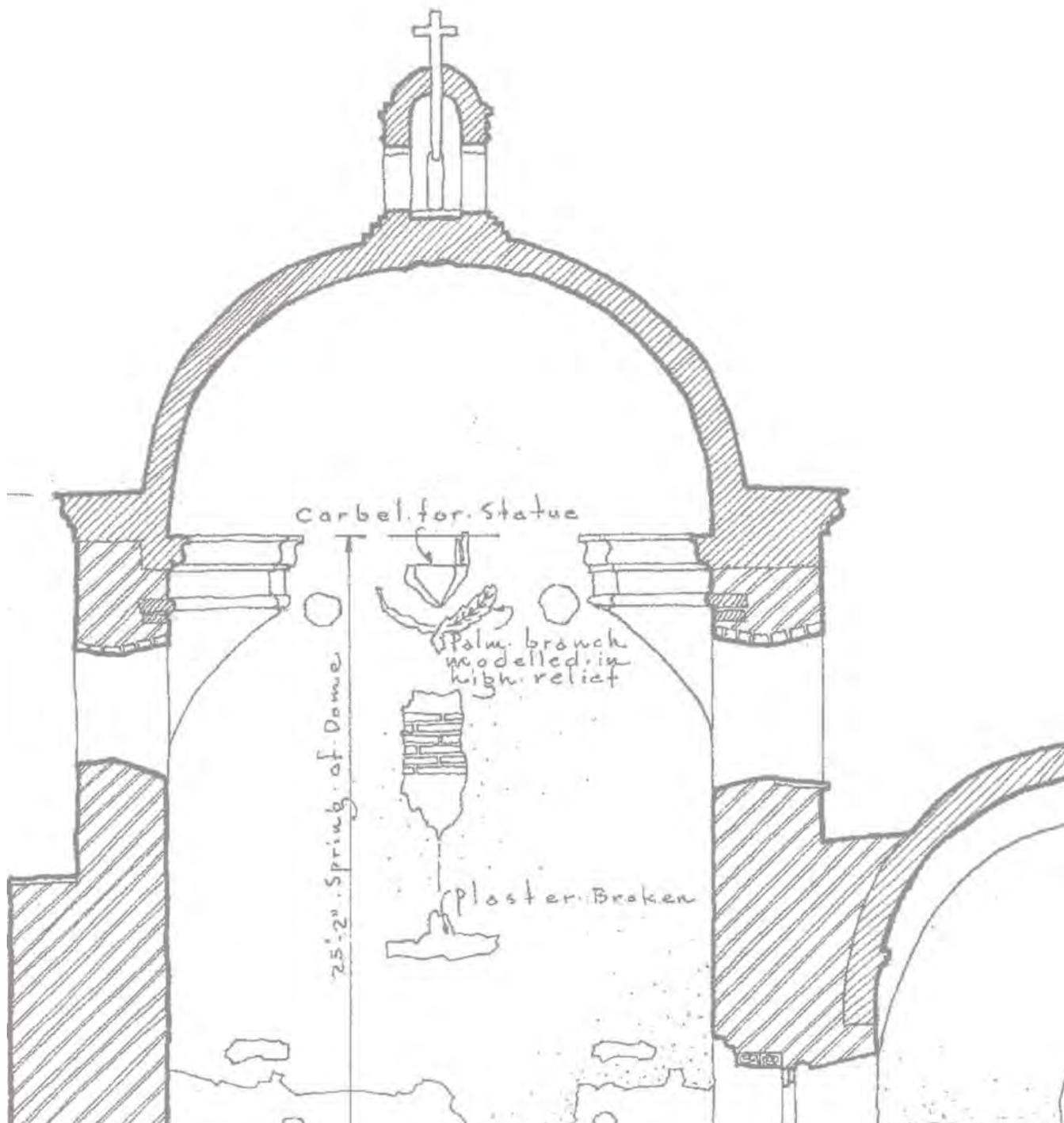
Like wine, tequila may be evaluated on many levels: aroma, appearance, texture, and taste are key elements in appraising any tequila. There are some general distinctions and classifications to assist anyone interested in increasing their appreciation for tequila. The two varieties of Tequila are Tequila 100% Agave which is composed of only 100% blue agave juices and must be bottled at the distillery in Mexico and the more commonplace variety of tequila which requires only 51% of its composition to be blue agave juices and which may be exported to other countries for bottling.

Within either variety, there are four types. Tequila Blanco is clear in color and is often quite potent, having been bottled straight from the still. It is intended to be enjoyed straight up. Joven or Abocado is Tequila Blanco augmented with colorings and flavors that give it a golden hue. If margaritas are on the menu, this is the variety to use. Reposado is Tequila that has been stored in white oak casks for up to one year, lending this variety a milder flavor. Añejo Tequila has a darker color and a oak-like flavor from being stored in casks for more than a year, sometimes considerably more.

For a treat, or as a test, find a quality Tequila Blanco. Pour it into a small glass, or caballito, at room temperature. Leave the salt and lime on the table. Then, over invigorating conversation or in the evening hum of a desert sunset, sip the history, exactitude, and delectation shimmering in this silver brew.

Sources: <http://www.itequila.org/> and <http://www.crt.org.mx/>

10

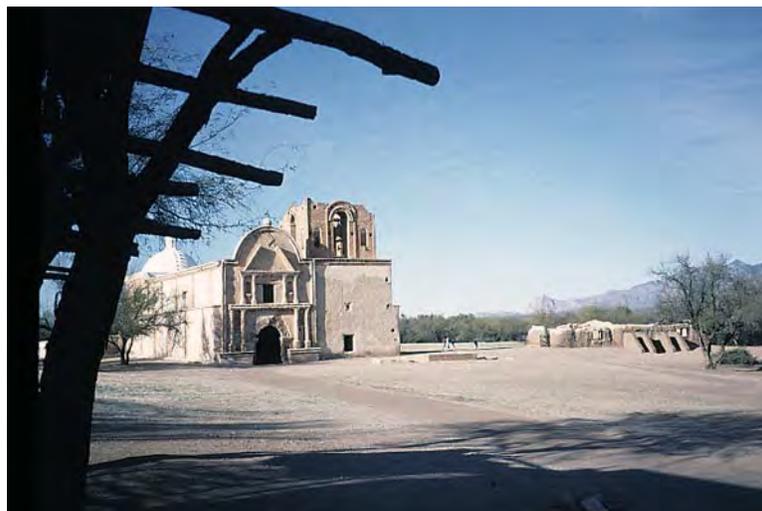


---

# TUMACÁCORI

John Messina

Approximately fifty miles south of Tucson on the Santa Cruz River is the mission site of San José de Tumacácori, now a National Historic Park. In 1691, when the Jesuit missionary Eusebio Kino first visited what was then a Piman village on the east side of the Santa Cruz, he blessed the site with the name San Cayetano. By 1753, San Cayetano had been moved to the opposite side of the river and the name changed to San José. Just ten years prior to their expulsion from New Spain in 1767, the Jesuits completed an adobe hall church on the site, and that structure was used until the current church, which was begun in 1802 by later Franciscan residents, replaced it in the 1820s. A cloistered *convento* building was constructed on the east side of the church, as was a mortuary chapel and cemetery to the north. The complex contained the usual residence for priests, as well as workshops, corrals, and classrooms for religious instruction. Of all the missions in the Pimería Alta, Tumacácori offers the best extant example



*Fig. 10.1 – Mission church San José de Tumacácori as seen from the southwest. The adobe ruin to the right of the church is part of the original convento complex. Courtesy of John Messina, Southwest Center, University of Arizona.*



Fig. 10.2 – Façade of Mission church San José de Tumacácori. Courtesy of John Messina, Southwest Center, University of Arizona.

sites in the vicinity, Quevavi and Calabasas, preserve only relatively small adobe ruins. San José de Tumacácori was originally a *visita* to Quevavi, the *cabecera* or mission with a resident priest.

Stepping out from the north side of the museum-visitor's center one can't help but be taken by the sight of the mission church across the hard-packed field (fig. 10.1). The rather free neo-classical facade appears strangely unrelated to the overscaled tower base that encloses a relatively diminutive baptistery (fig. 10.2). All of the parts—the double tiers of columns and architraves supporting a broken equilateral triangle, topped by a semi-circular crest—come together as in some postmodern composition. The entry portal is partially surrounded by a heavy Romanesque-like arch. As with other mission churches in the Pimería Alta, the builders of this church apparently took liberties with their limited knowledge of architectural history.

A Franciscan priest, Narciso Gutiérrez, laid out the current church in a cruciform shape with the intention that the nave, sanctuary, and transept arms would be vaulted and that there would be a dome over the crossing. Father Gutiérrez was able to execute only a small part of his design—the walls up to seven feet in height—before he died in 1820. Because of limited funds, his successor, Juan Bautista Estelric, assisted by a *maestro albañil*, or master builder, from Zacatecas, simplified the original plan by eliminating the transept (fig. 10.3). However, Father Estelric and his maestro, Félix Antonio Bustamante, were able to raise the walls an additional seven feet. Estelric's successor, Father Ramón Liberós, completed the structure, but not without additional simplification. He covered the nave with a more typical flat, *viga*-supported roof, instead of the originally proposed vault and eliminated the dome from over the crossing, placing it instead over the sanctuary. A triumphal arch separates the sanctuary from the nave. Surprisingly, considering the scarcity

of frontier mission planning. Two other mission

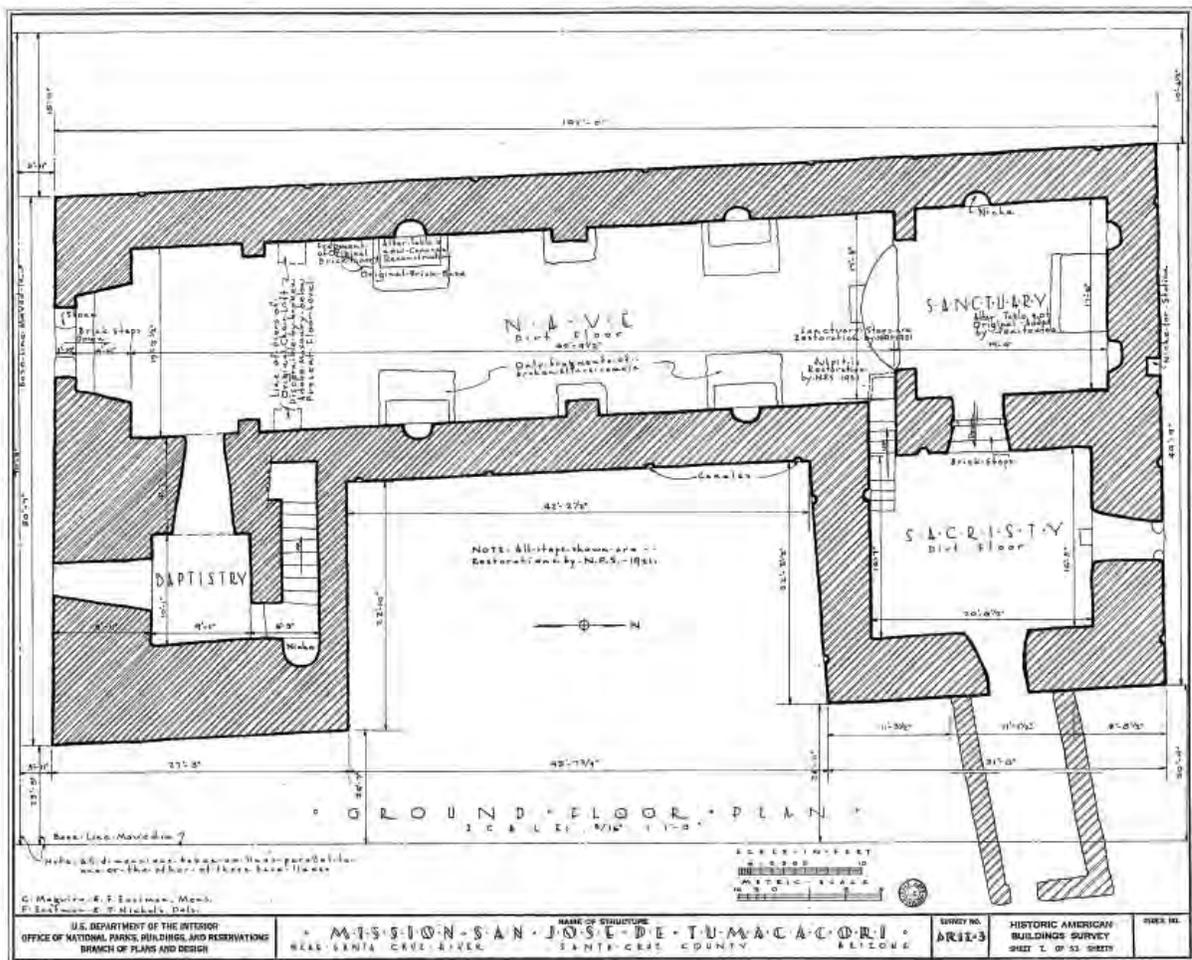


Fig. 10.5 – Plan of Mission church San José de Tumacácori drawn in 1957 for the Historic American Buildings Survey. North is to the right. Courtesy of Historic American Buildings Survey, Library of Congress.

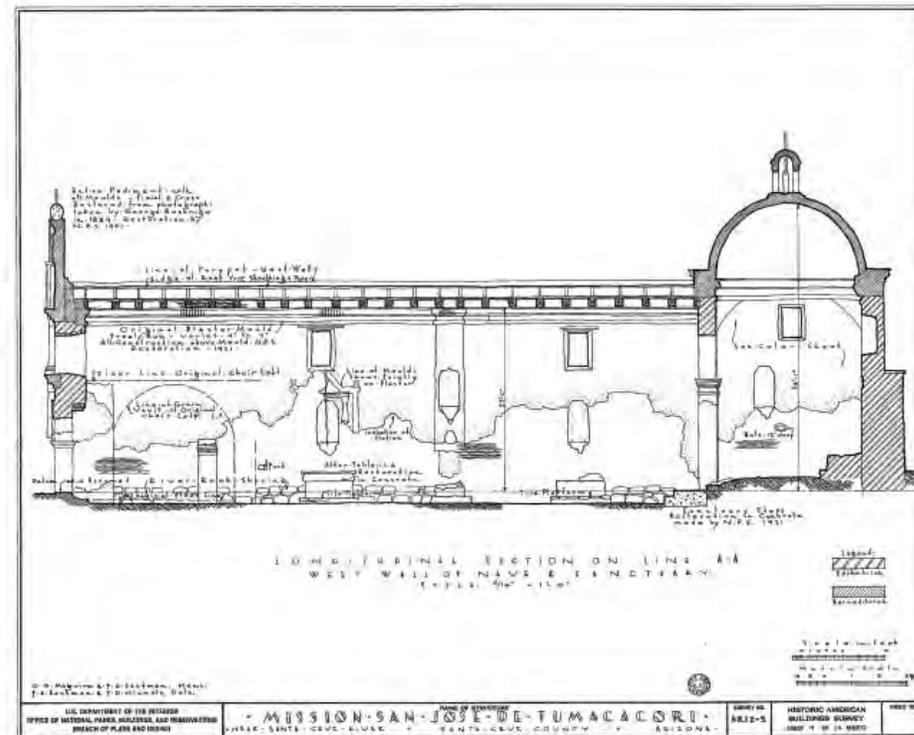
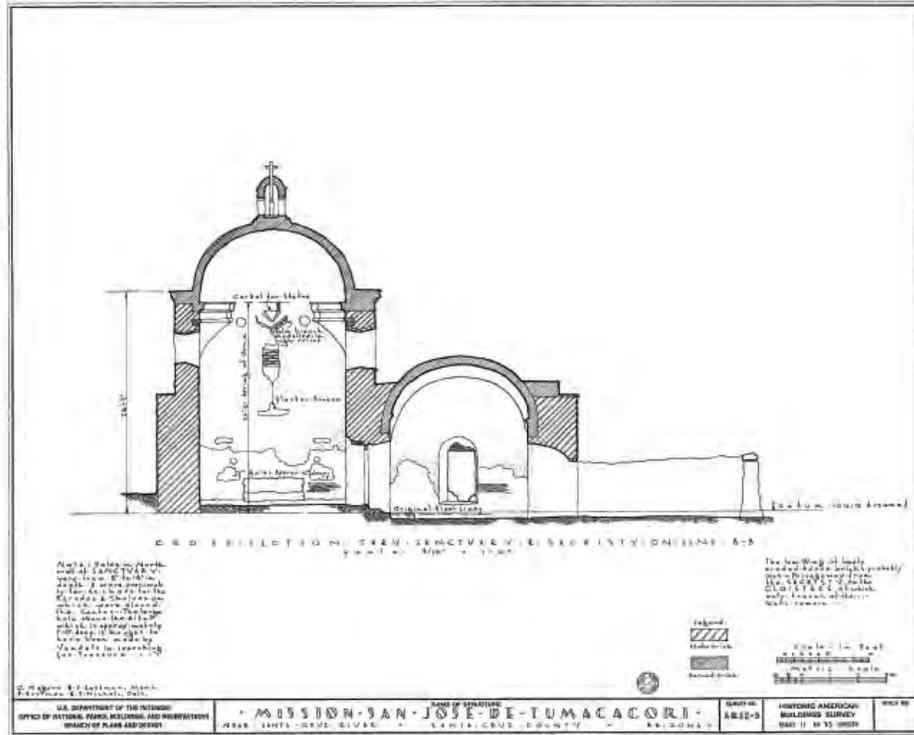


Fig. 10.4a & b – Section drawings, Mission church San José de Tumacácori drawn in 1957 for the Historic American Buildings Survey. Transverse section (top) through the sanctuary and sacristy; longitudinal section (bottom) through the nave. Courtesy of Historic American Buildings Survey, Library of Congress.

of funds, Father Liberós also had a vault built over the sacristy. It appears that the single tower was never finished.

As built, the interior of the church, from entrance to the rear of the sanctuary, is approximately 90' long (fig. 10.4 a-b). The nave is 17' wide, and the ceiling is 24' high. The side walls are 5' thick, having been built wide enough to receive the thrust of the vault that was originally planned. There are sections at the base of the tower where the walls are as much as 9' thick. The walls are built of a mixture of both sun-dried adobes and fired bricks. Given the relative softness of the former, the church has required constant preservation on the part of the National Park Service. During the middle of the 18th century, much of Tumacácori's religious art was taken by faithful Indians to San Xavier in order to protect it from raiding Apaches. Several of the statues are currently installed in San Xavier's side chapels.

Historical descriptions and drawings of Tumacácori, as well as archaeological evidence, indicate that directly east of the church there was once a cloister courtyard surrounded by arcades and rooms. A partial adobe ruin, referred to as the *convento*, remains today on the rise to the right of the church. North of the "convento," one can see vestiges of the foundations of former structures. Directly behind the church is a cemetery where Indians were buried, as well as an unfinished circular mortuary chapel. To the east side of this chapel are the stabilized walls of another 19th century structure. Since the federal mandate for Tumacácori is stabilization and preservation, not restoration or reconstruction, little has been done to the church and ancillary structures other than re-roofing the nave and restoring the upper facade. There are no current plans to exceed this level of care.

Tumacácori was initially established as a National Monument in 1908 and is currently administered by the United States National Park Service. The museum/visitor center, with its planted patio, was built with adobe walls in 1937. Many of the center's historicizing architectural features, such as the shell motif over the main entrance and the carved corbels and beamed ceiling in the lobby, are derived from details of other mission churches in the Pimería Alta that were surveyed on a National Park Service expedition in 1935. The main entry doors were patterned on those at the mission church at San Ignacio de Cabórica in Sonora and were crafted by Civilian Conservation Corps carpenters at Bandelier National Monument in New Mexico.

(this text has been compiled from Nicholas J. Bleser, *Tumacácori: From Rancharia to National Monument* [Tucson: Southwestern Parks and Monuments Association, n.d.], Mardith Schuetz-Miller and Bernard L. Fontana, "Mission Churches of Northern Sonora" in *The Pimería Alta*, ed. James E. Officer, et al. (Tucson: Southwestern Mission Research Center, 1996), and Buford Pickens, ed. *The Missions of Northern Sonora: A 1935 Field Documentation* [Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1993])

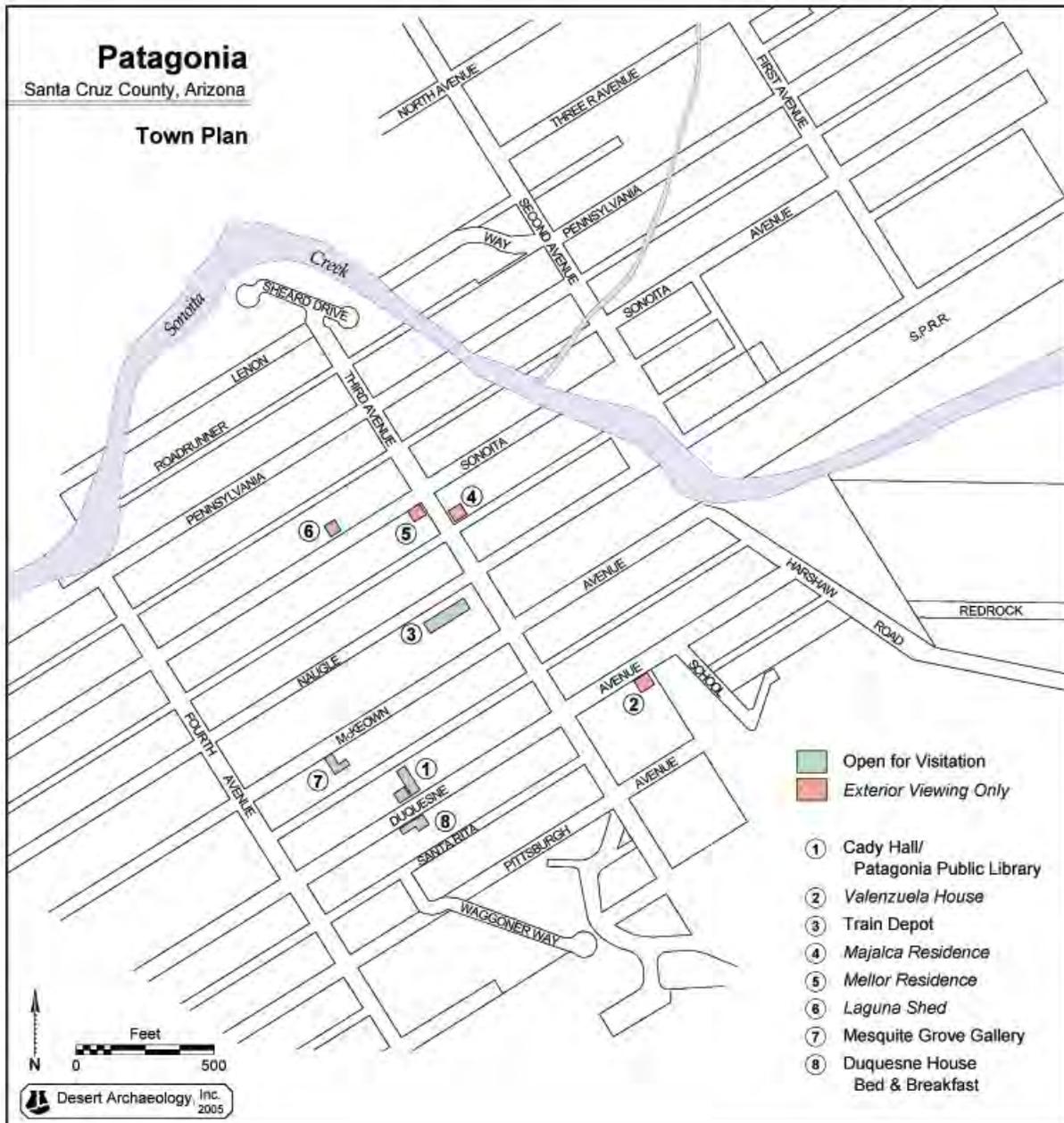


Fig. 11.1 – Patagonia’s town plan was laid out on either side of the railroad tracks whose right-of-way is now a public common. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology Inc. after Don Ryden & Associates

---

# PATAGONIA

R. Brooks Jeffery

**S**traddling Sonoita Creek, Patagonia is a microcosm of the various rural town architectural typologies that existed in southern Arizona at the end of the 19th century. It was first established to support mining (including the Mowry and Harshaw mines) as well as ranching operations in the lush grasslands surrounding the town. After the railroad arrived, Patagonia became a regional center, serving as a stockyard for the export of cattle and an ore-loading dock for the silver, lead, zinc, and copper that had been discovered in the mountains nearby. In addition, Patagonia represents the vision of a single man, Rollin Richardson, who, as the town's real-estate magnate, controlled its development and character as a middle-class company town.

Gradually, the pre-manufactured goods imported by rail transformed the architectural language of the small town. Its architecture represents various types of national folk architecture, including gable-roofed, hall-and-parlor, and pyramidal-roofed four-square houses, built primarily of adobe.

## **1. Cady Hall/Patagonia Public Library, 346 Duquesne Street**

Built in stages between 1901 and 1912 by John H. Cady, this building originally housed the Patagonia Hotel and contained a restaurant, saloon, and meeting hall that was a gathering place for dances, town meetings, and other social and civic events. In 1957, the Patagonia Women's Club founded the library and began using the hall space. In 1990, a restoration project was begun to repair the southeast facade, porch, windows, doors,

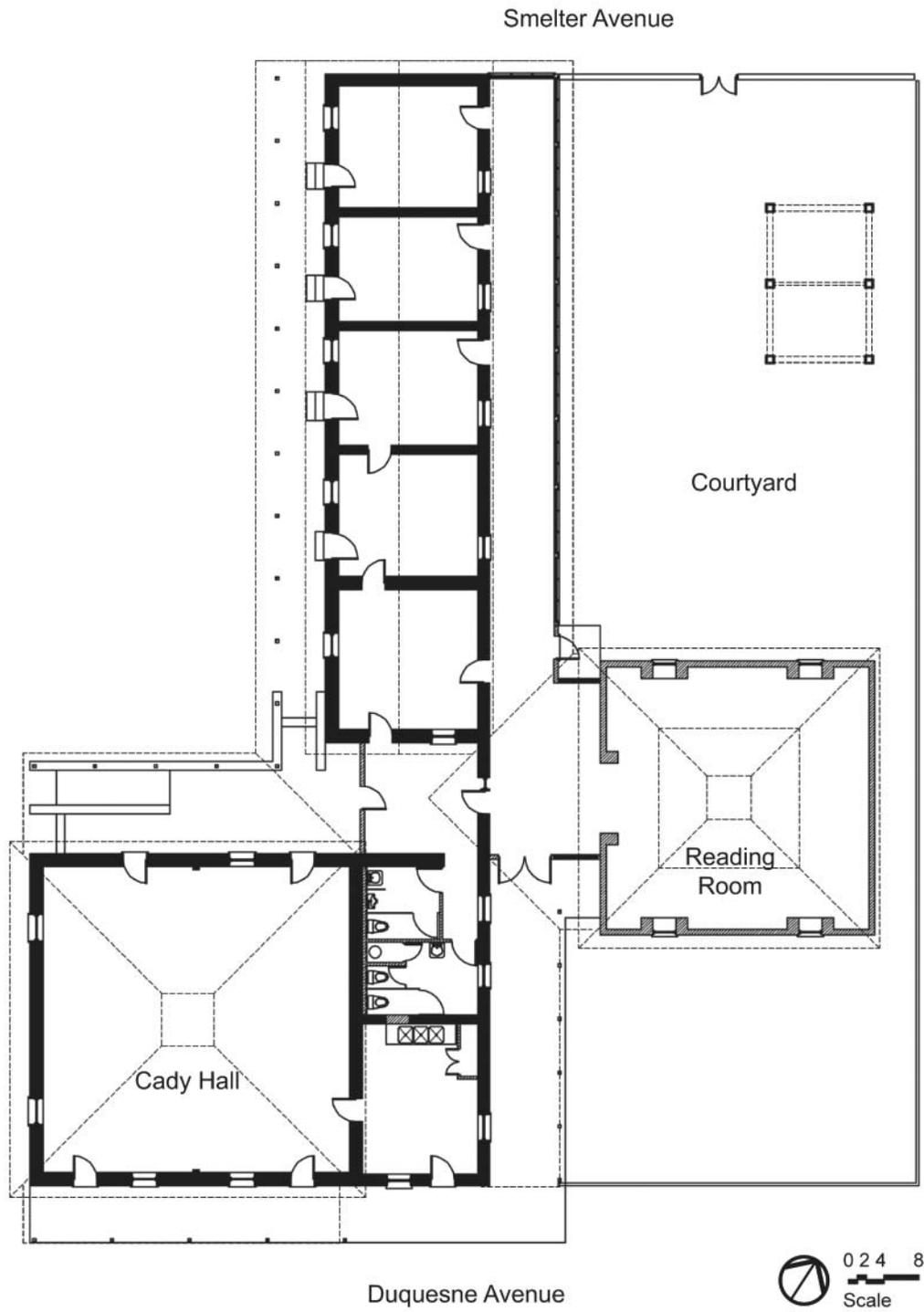


Fig. 11.2 – Plan of Cady Hall and the Patagonia Public Library, 2004 showing the recent library addition (right) and original Patagonia Hotel buildings (left). Courtesy of Arturo Vazquez, Design W, LLC

and the interior of the hall. A new library reading room was added to the northeast in 1995, sensitively replicating the size and form of the original hall. A restoration of the former hotel wing, which had been used more recently as apartments, was also conducted at that time.

Cady Hall is an example of territorial period building typologies, illustrating the transition from Sonoran to American building traditions. It is a one-story, L-shaped building consisting of a square main hall, the original dining room/hall

of the southwest wall and the other in the middle of the northeast wall, were both restored after the originals were demolished down to the roof line at some unknown time in the past.

The building has three roof types: the square hall has a truncated pyramidal roof topped by a restored balustrade, the former hotel wing has a gable roof corresponding to its rectangular floor plan, and the front porch, forming the hotel's facade facing Duquesne Street, has a dropped hip roof. The current entry vestibule between



*Fig. 11.5 – Exterior, Cady Hall, Patagonia showing the Hall building with a pyramidal roof form, the entry to the current Patagonia Public Library with the shed roof (formerly a porch to the former Patagonia Hotel) and the new library reading room to the right, also with a pyramidal roof. Courtesy of Andrew Gorski.*

facing southeast (onto Duquesne Street) and, to the northwest, a kitchen and four additional rooms making up a wing of the original hotel. The four rooms were originally built as eight rooms that, to support the building's current use as a library, were opened up into larger reading rooms and offices. To the rear of the hall, on the northwest side, there was originally an open porch with a shed roof; it was enclosed during the 1950s to create a kitchen foyer and bathroom. The two chimneys of the hall, one in the middle

of the original hall and new library portion to the northeast was formerly a porch with shed roof attached to the hall. Shed roof extensions also cover the two wooden porches of the former hotel wing—the northwest one is now an enclosed corridor housing computer workstations—that provided access to the hotel rooms on both sides of the building.

The lime-plastered adobe walls of both original buildings are 20" thick, constructed of a double row of ten-inch adobe blocks in common

use during the period of the building's construction. The foundation comprises stone with lime mortar. The flooring of the main hall is two layers of tongue-and-groove maple over fir. The floors of the library wing are also of wood with the exception of one room that has concrete. Each of the four rooms in the former hotel wing has two doors and two windows, corresponding to two of the original eight hotel rooms. The wood frame roof of the hall is constructed of 2x4 rafters with spacing as wide as 32" on-center and was originally shingled, then covered with corrugated metal to match that of the former hotel wing. The current metal roofs were added during the building restoration project of the early 1990s.

## 2. Valenzuela House, 289 Duquesne Street

A classic two-story four-square house with a truncated pyramidal roof topped with a balustrade. The house is constructed of unplastered adobe that is slowly eroding due to the effects of weather, as is revealed in the blurring of mortar lines and the now protruding door and window frames whose alignment reveals the original depth of the wall surface prior to erosion. Particularly evident is the effect of rainwater falling from the roof onto the wall surfaces prior to the installation of the gutter system, as seen in the more pronounced horizontal bands of erosion. The wood frame roof retains its original wood shake shingle sheathing. There is physical evidence on the street façade of a second floor porch that also shaded the ground floor but no photos have been found to confirm its form and character.



*Fig. 11.4 – Valenzuela House, Patagonia. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

### 3. Train Depot, Naugle & Third Avenues

Built in 1900 by the New Mexico & Arizona Railroad as a freight house and train depot, this building demonstrated the company's belief in Patagonia's potential as a center for mining and cattle operations in southeastern Arizona. The rectangular building is a vernacular interpretation of the picturesque cottage style defined by A. J. Downing, with simple wooden brackets supporting a projecting hipped roof above the level of the first floor and breaking up the scale of the depot's two-story element. Also consistent with this style is the use of wood frame construction with board-and-batten sheathing. The interior has been greatly modified to accommodate the building's current use as the Patagonia City Hall.



*Fig. 11.5 – Train Depot, Patagonia, Courtesy of Andrew Gorski.*

### 4. Majalca Residence, 170 N. Third Avenue

This classic pyramidal cottage has a one-story, four-square plan with a front porch addition covered by a dropped hip roof matching the form of the roof of the main house. The house is constructed of exposed adobe with wood frame roofing members and porch structure, all covered with corrugated metal. The double-hung windows are tall and thin, as was typical of the territorial period in Arizona, and constructed of imported milled lumber.



*Fig. 11.6 – Majalca Residence, Patagonia. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

### 5. Mellor Residence, 191 N. Third Avenue

Similar to the Majalca Residence, the Mellor Residence is a pyramidal cottage constructed of exposed adobe block with a wood frame roof. Where it differs is in the use of a wrap-around wooden porch that not only provides outdoor living space but also to a certain extent protects the exposed adobe walls from the effects of rain and sun. The roof dormers appear not to be original but there is no evidence to indicate when they were added.



*Fig. 11.7 – Mellor Residence, Patagonia. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

### 6. Laguna Adobe Shed, 322 Sonoita Avenue

This shed, attached to the residence at 314 Sonoita, was originally a detached residence embodying the gable-front type of vernacular dwellings. It is two rooms wide and two rooms deep with its main entry facing the street under the high-pitched gable roof. The structure is built of adobe block resting on stone foundations with a wood frame floor and roof, the latter sheathed in corrugated metal.



*Fig. 11.8 – Laguna Adobe Shed, Patagonia. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

### 7. Mesquite Grove Gallery, 361 McKeown Avenue

Formerly a residence, this house is an example of the gable-and-wing, or L-shaped vernacular dwelling type with three principal rooms and subsequent additions to the rear. The principal gable faces the street and the wing is set back parallel to the street providing space at the crux of the “L” for an attached wood frame porch with a dropped shed roof typical of the house type. The walls are constructed of adobe block on stone foundations with a wood frame roof and wooden flooring.



8.

*Fig. 11.9 – Mesquite Grove Gallery, Patagonia, Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

### Duquesne House Bed & Breakfast

The Duquesne House was formerly a boarding house for miners coming into town for the weekend from the surrounding mines. The plan resembles the traditional cellular form of the Sonoran rowhouse with five bays, each two rooms deep and facing outwards to either side of the long facade. The oversized gable roof is an awkward attempt to marry the Sonoran plan with American roof forms; over the bays, the roof has a high pitch sheltering storage attics, over the living room part of the bed & breakfast, the roof shelters a large two-story interior space. The 24” thick walls are constructed of adobe block with a wood frame roof originally covered by wooden shingles and now sheathed in corrugated tin.



*Fig. 11.10 (below) – Duquesne House Bed & Breakfast, Patagonia. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

# 12

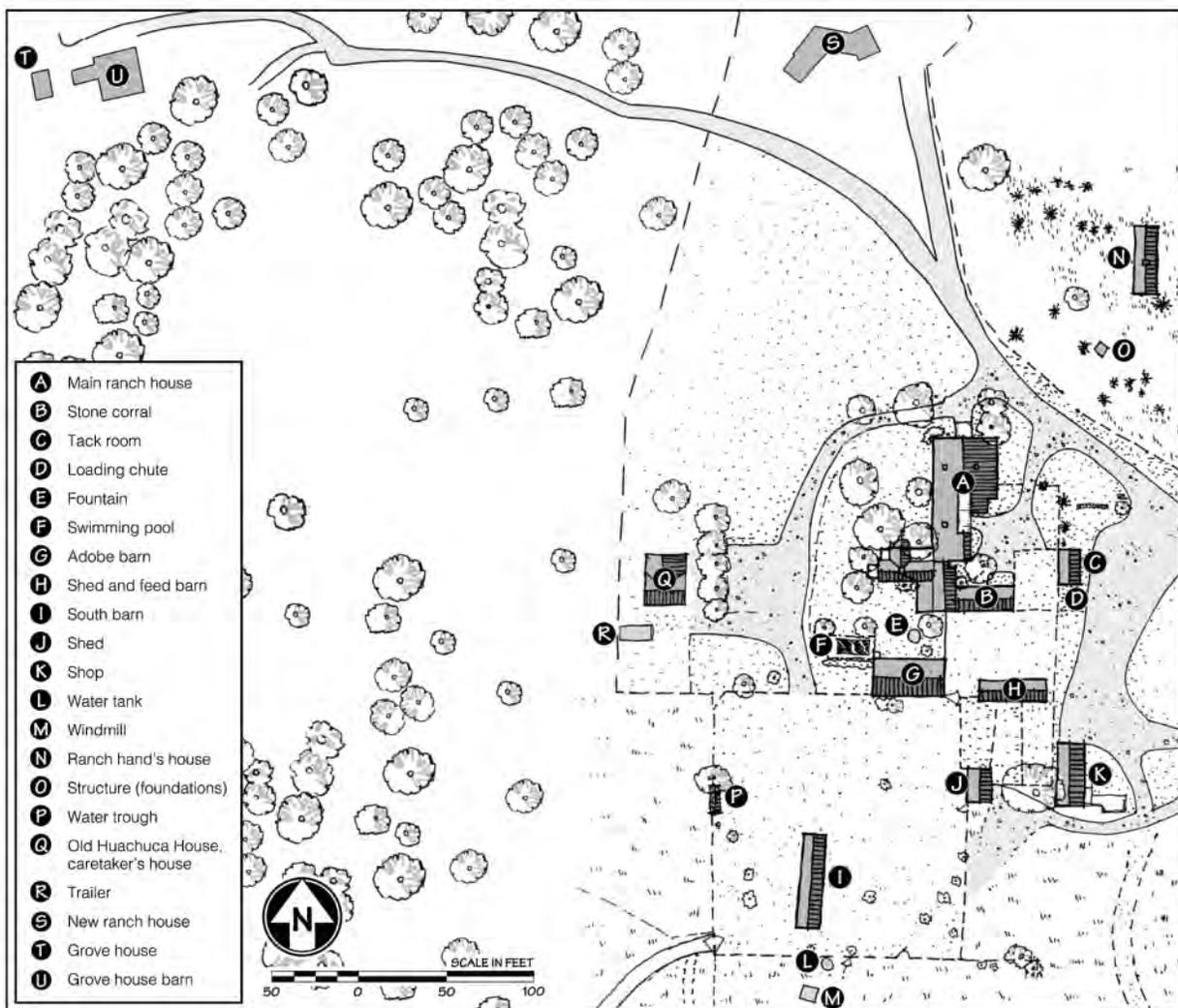


Fig. 12.1 – Site Plan of Empire Ranch. Courtesy of Statistical Research Inc. from Majewski, Teresa et al. Adaptive-Reuse Plan for the Empire Ranch Headquarters. Statistical Research, Inc. Tucson, AZ. Technical Report

---

# EMPIRE RANCH

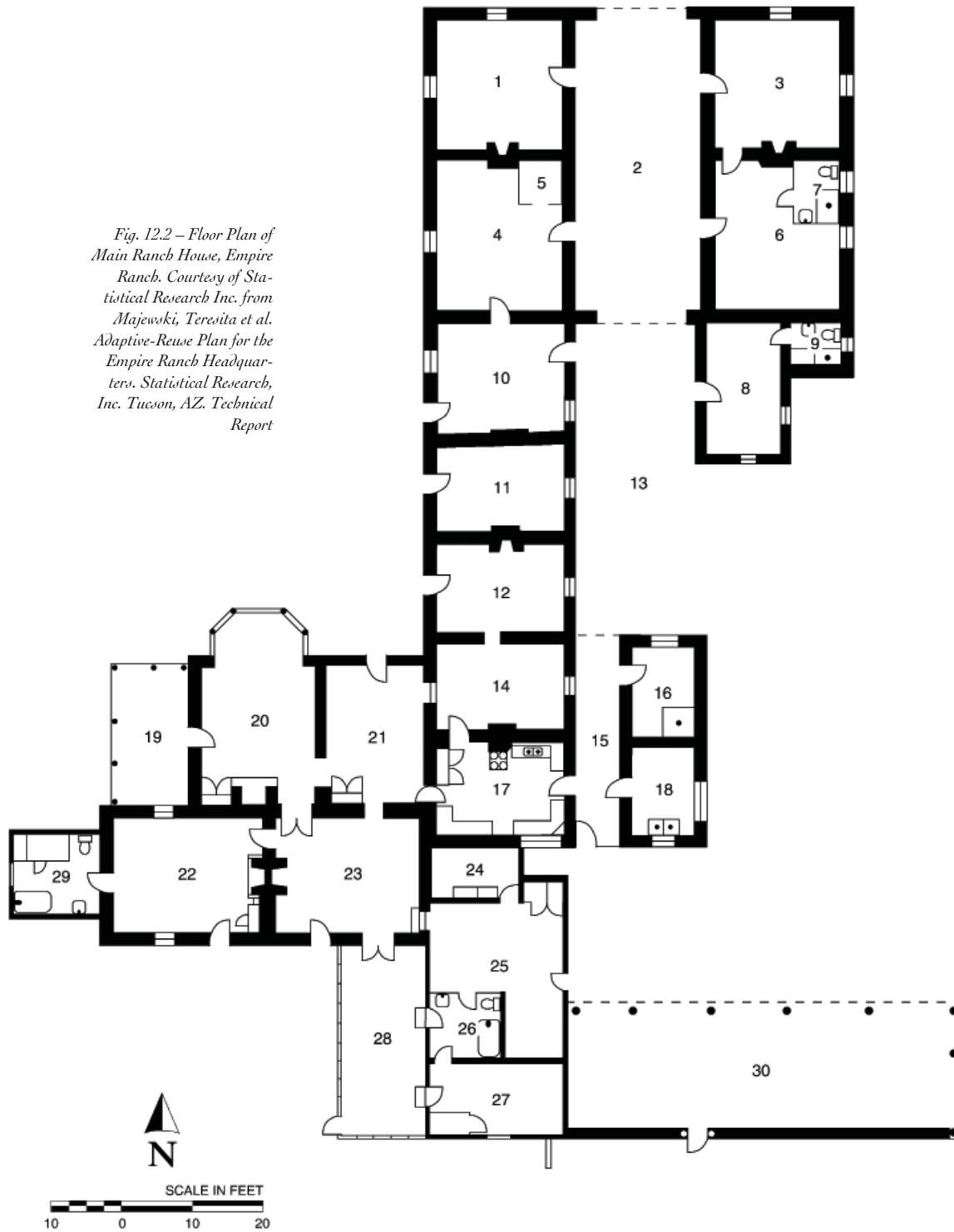
Simon Herbert

**T**he Empire Ranch Headquarters centers on the Empire Ranch House, the home of the Vail and Boice families during their respective tenures on the ranch and, from the beginning, the focus of the working life of the ranch (fig. 12.1). A simple four-room adobe house had already been constructed (between 1871 and 1874) by the time Walter Vail purchased the property in 1876.

The Empire Ranch House was expanded several times over the years, first by Vail and his partners, then by the Vail descendants. The Boices later repaired and remodeled the house as their family and business grew, but the basic layout remained essentially unchanged. Today, the Empire Ranch House—some 29 rooms of it—still reflects, to a remarkable degree, the lives of the many people who lived and worked on the ranch over the more than 130 years of its operation.

Because of the vernacular and organic growth patterns of construction at Empire Ranch, the building histories have been collected from a variety of sources—written, oral, photographic, and physical—in a complex process that awaits completion. For this reason, individual room histories for the Ranch House have yet to be fully researched and documented, and the same can be said of the histories of the outbuildings. The following information is based on research performed to date, and summarizes the building histories from these sources.

*Fig. 12.2 – Floor Plan of Main Ranch House, Empire Ranch. Courtesy of Statistical Research Inc. from Majewski, Teresita et al. Adaptive-Reuse Plan for the Empire Ranch Headquarters. Statistical Research, Inc. Tucson, AZ. Technical Report*



1. Cowboy's quarters	7. Bathroom	13. Patio	19. Front porch	25. Nursery
2. Zaguán or hall	8. Ranch foreman's quarters	14. Cook's quarters	20. Living room	26. Bathroom
3. Cowboy's quarters	9. Bathroom	15. Hall	21. Dining room	27. Bedroom
4. Cowboy's dining room	10. Cowboy's kitchen	16. Cowboy cook's quarters	22. Bedroom	28. Screened porch
5. Walk-in freezer	11. Office	17. Ranch house kitchen	23. Bedroom	29. Bathroom
6. Company store (1950s)	12. Bookkeeper's quarters	18. Storage and pantry	24. Closet	30. Stone corral

## Ranch House

The Ranch House (A on site plan) represents a complex, interconnected collection of vernacular buildings that were constructed to meet a wide variety of changing conditions (fig. 12.2). In the 1870s and early 1880s, buildings were constructed under some of the most difficult frontier conditions. By the 1940s and 1950s, the Ranch House was being upgraded with modern conveniences such as natural gas, electrical power supplied by power lines instead of generators, lush gardens, and even a swimming pool.

**Original Ranch House (Rooms 1-7):** Edward Nye Fish probably constructed the original adobe building between 1871 and 1874, and this formed the nucleus of what was to become a complex of connected buildings that are collectively called the Empire Ranch House (fig. 12.3). The almost square adobe building had a flat, compacted earth roof covering its four rooms and the divided central breezeway, sometimes referred to by the Spanish term as a *zaguán*. The breezeway was

oriented on a north-south axis with two rooms to either side. A large, north-facing doorway provided the only access into the rooms and corral on the south. Cattle and horses could be kept in the corral under the watchful eye of the ranchers, an arrangement designed to discourage Apache raids. In these early years, there were no permanent doors or windows. It is interesting to note that by the time the compacted earth roof had been covered with a pitched roof in 1887, there was a total of 13 layers of built-up earth, variously compacted. (This was discovered during repair work in 2001–2002.)

**Rear Addition (Rooms 10–14 and 17), Foreman’s Quarters (Rooms 8 and 9), and Cowboy Cook’s Wing (Adobe, Rooms 15, 16, and 18):** In 1876, Fish sold the ranch to Walter Vail and Henry Hislop, who continued to expand ranch activities. With expansion came the need to add living space, and more adobe rooms were added on to the south side of the original building between 1878 and 1884. These rooms continued the inward and protective orientation of the earliest



*Fig. 12.5 – Ranch House from the west, ca. 1880. The original flat roofs of the Fish House and the adjoining Rear Addition are shown. The area around the house is fenced. Courtesy of Empire Ranch Foundation/Laura (Dusty) Vail Ingram/Bureau of Land Management (Image # A415-1)*

rooms because Apache raids were still a possibility. These additions also had flat, compacted-earth roofs. By now, doors and windows had been installed in the original building. The additions retained their flat earthen roofs until about 1890, when they were also covered with a pitched roof (figs. 12.4 and 12.5).

**Victorian Addition** (Rooms 19–23 and 29): Probably planned and built at the same time (ca. 1878) as the Rear Addition, the adobe Victorian

made into the Rear Addition in 1896–1895, and a bathroom (Room 29) was added by 1925.

When Frank “Pancho” Boice became the sole owner of the ranch in 1951, Rooms 19–23 of the Victorian Addition were substantially remodeled. Decorative Victorian elements were removed or covered over, and some fenestration was changed to modern units, including the bay window. The kitchen (Room 17) was upgraded to include modern fixtures, decor, and appliances.



*Fig. 12.4 – View of the ranch from the northeast, c1890. The original Fish portion of the house now has a gable roof, as do Rooms 16 and 18 (the cook’s quarters). In the foreground stands a horse, thought to belong to Edward Vail. Courtesy of Empire Ranch Foundation/Laura (Dusty) Vail Ingram/Bureau of Land Management (Image # A415-1)*

Addition was first called the Harvey House, for one of the Empire Ranch partners, John Harvey, who built the two-room house (Rooms 22 and 23) for his new wife. The house eventually grew to include Rooms 19, 20, 21, and 29. The orientation and the lack of internal doors connecting to the other parts of the buildings were most likely intended to provide some separation between the married couple and the unmarried men at the ranch. When Harvey left in 1881, Walter Vail’s new bride, Margaret, purchased the house from Harvey. Other spaces were added. The space between the bay window and the Rear Addition was enclosed to become Room 21, openings were

(Note: Eric Means’s investigative work on the ranch house is responsible for revealing many of the answers regarding construction sequence.)

**Children’s Addition** (Rooms 24–28): This ca. 1886 addition consists of a wood frame building moved to the site. A small shed-roofed porch on the west side was replaced by a screened porch (Room 28) in 1924 or 1925.

In general, many of the wood floors in the Ranch House were replaced with concrete (ca. 1917-25) when it was discovered that skunks were nesting in the subfloor spaces. In ca. 1948, cement stucco over chicken wire was applied to the exterior adobe walls.

## Outbuildings

**Adobe Hay Barn (G on site plan):** Built in ca. 1880 when there was still some concern about Apache raids, this barn may have served originally to protect valuable livestock, particularly horses, from theft. The main entrance to the barn was originally in its north wall, as photos from the 1880s attest, but around 1900 this entrance and the windows on that wall were closed up and a new entrance was opened in the east wall. These changes probably took place after the barn was damaged in a fire. A large opening for a sliding door was later made in the south wall.

In photographs from the 1880s, a large water tank is shown adjacent to the west end of the barn. It was still there in photographs from 1937, but was removed before the 1950s. A concrete

wall constructed sometime between 1920 and 1930 extends from the northeast wall of the barn to the Children's Addition. Emergency measures to stabilize the Hay Barn began in 2003 and are still underway as of late 2004.

**Grove House (T):** Possibly dating back to the Fish era (early 1870s), this is a small adobe building now occupied by a ranch hand who works for the Donaldsons, the current ranchers.

**Stone Corral (B):** Originally used to house the ranch's stallions (until ca. 1929), this stone and wood corral later served as a woodshed (until 1969) housing a gas-powered saw for cutting firewood. The concrete foundation dates from the 1950s, when repairs were made to correct an outward-leaning wall. The Stone Corral was restored in 2002.



*Fig. 12.5 – Ladies and cook in the patio, ca. 1885. A pitched roof is being constructed over the cook's quarters (Rooms 16 and 18). It is interesting to note that nearly all of the doorways on the right were later changed to windows, as the orientation and use of the building changed. Courtesy of Empire Ranch Foundation/Laura (Dusty) Vail Ingram/Bureau of Land Management (Image # A500-062)*

**Hired Man's House (N):** This small, two-room adobe building (ca. 1906–1920) was constructed for a Mexican-American couple who worked on the ranch, and was later made available to other ranch workers and their families. Just south of the house is a small, steel-cable reinforced concrete structure that may have been the base for a stock tank.

**South Barn (I):** Built in ca. 1920-21 to house horses, this barn was later used as a shop to store windmill-related and other tools. In the 1940s, it was changed and modified for the shooting of a Hollywood film.

**Shed and Feed Barn (H):** Built in ca. 1928, this wooden building is also known as the Covered Feed Troughs.

**Tack Room (C):** This wooden structure of uncertain date was also known as the Saddle Shed between 1928 and 1969.

**Fountain (E) and Swimming Pool (F):** Located in the garden between the Ranch House and Adobe Barn, these concrete features dating to about the 1940s were an important part of both the physical and cultural landscapes at the ranch. The pool was filled in during the 1990s for safety reasons.

**Loading Chute (D):** This wooden feature was built in the 1950s for loading and unloading saddle horses that were trucked to other parts of the ranch where they would be used.



*Fig. 12.6 – Vaqueros, lady, and children in front of the cook's quarters, ca. 1890. Careful comparison of historical photographs, show numerous alterations being made to the buildings over time to meet the ever-changing needs and conditions of the Empire Ranch. Courtesy of Empire Ranch Foundation/Laura (Dusty) Vail Ingram/Bureau of Land Management (Image # A500-057)*

**Old Huachuca House, Caretaker's House (Q):**

This wood frame and stucco house was possibly moved from Fort Huachuca and therefore was likely built before 1950. It may become the future visitors' center for the Empire Ranch.

**Water Tank (L) and Windmill (M):** In the 1950s, this water tank, located south of the Adobe Hay Barn, replaced the original water tank located just to the west of the Barn. It is still in use. The windmill, a Dempster No.12, is no longer used to pump water, but was recently restored to its original appearance and repaired to function by the Bureau of Land Management (BLM).

**New Ranch House (S):** This structure from ca. 1950 is now a part-time Bureau of Land Management (BLM) Field Station.

**Shed (J) and Shop (K).** These utilitarian buildings of unknown date were used for storage and workshop space.

### Adaptive-Reuse Plans

While the Empire Ranch is listed in the National Register of Historic Places at the State level of significance, it is hoped that it will be elevated to national-level status before implementation of the adaptive-reuse plan. Still, finding the best approach for reusing buildings at the Empire Ranch poses certain challenges, given its long history. The recommended period of significance extends from the early 1870s to the present, so no one period of history can be easily highlighted in isolation from the others. The layering of historical events and architectural construction will likely be interpreted from a present-day viewpoint, with few changes or alterations being made. This approach would also discourage attempts to make all parts of the ranch fit an early appearance.

Future visitors to the Empire Ranch will need help in understanding how the ranch grew and changed over time, and to this end, it is planned that the ranch become the Empire Ranch Western

Heritage and Education Center. This center will interpret the ranch's rich history and that of ranching activities generally in southeastern Arizona. At the same time, ranching operations will continue under a grazing permit from the BLM, thus continuing a strong tradition on this land. These continued ranching activities will be paramount to visitor's experience of the ranch. With the rise of heritage tourism, Empire Ranch could well become a focal point for any visitor seeking to experience the American West.

The current primary objective is to stabilize the ranch building and outbuilding shells while planning for their long-term reuse. Eventually, the current limited-use house shell will be transformed into a fully stable historic house shell that can be used for museum interpretation. A hierarchy of significance based on current integrity will drive the decision-making process as to which spaces will likely be restored or adaptively reused. The outbuildings were, and still are, an important part of the ranch operations, and their future use will be determined using the same criteria applied to the main Ranch House.

Landscaping is also considered an important aspect of the ranch history and garden spaces will be designed and replanted to reflect a particular time period or periods. The garden area to the south of the Children's Addition may be connected to a reopened entry in the large Adobe Hay Barn, which could serve as a gathering place for meetings and other events.

Finally, site planning will optimize and preserve the outstanding views around the ranch, and visitors will be routed to the main Empire Ranch House from a visitors' center in the Old Huachuca House, or Caretaker's House. Design and implementation of the plan will take several more years to achieve.

13



---

# MINING TOWNS

Janet Parkhurst and Harris Sobin  
with the assistance of  
R. Brooks Jeffery

**T**his tour, part driving, part walking, takes place southeast of Tucson, out of Pima County into the mining country of Cochise County. Sites and places on this tour include two historic districts in Benson, Arizona, a trade and transportation center with historic ties to mining; the verdant, Mormon-founded community of St. David; and Tombstone, a former mining town that has capitalized on its place in popular culture. The tour then continues on to the dramatic cultural landscape of the Warren Mining District, including the scenic hill town of Bisbee (fig. 13.1) and the nearby planned community of Warren, Arizona.



*Fig. 13.1 – Bisbee, c1910 looking southeast down Brewery Gulch. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (AHS 56124)*

## Benson

Benson has served since its inception as a transportation link, a role that began with a stage depot prior to 1880, the year in which the Southern Pacific Railroad arrived. The railroad fostered Benson's economic growth in significant ways (fig 13.2). The community was a passenger clearing house for southeastern Arizona and it served nearby mines and the mining towns of Clifton and Bisbee. Mining products were sent via wagon train to Benson to be shipped by rail. Benson became a hub city with the arrival of two additional railroads, the New Mexico and Arizona Railroad in 1882 and the Arizona Southeastern Railroad in 1894. Railroad traffic created a need for retail trades and services, hotels, saloons, livery stables, merchandising establishments, restaurants, and housing.<sup>1</sup>

When the Southern Pacific Railroad redirected its major route to Tucson in 1910, Benson experienced a temporary decline. However, in the 1920s Benson again became an important transportation junction point owing to its location on Federal Route 80 (now State Route 80), the national highway connecting Washington, D.C. to San Diego. Today's Route 80 is one and the same as Benson's "Main Street" or 4th Street. Owing to improvements in irrigation technology, ranching and agriculture brought additional growth and change to Benson. In addition, in 1922 the Apache

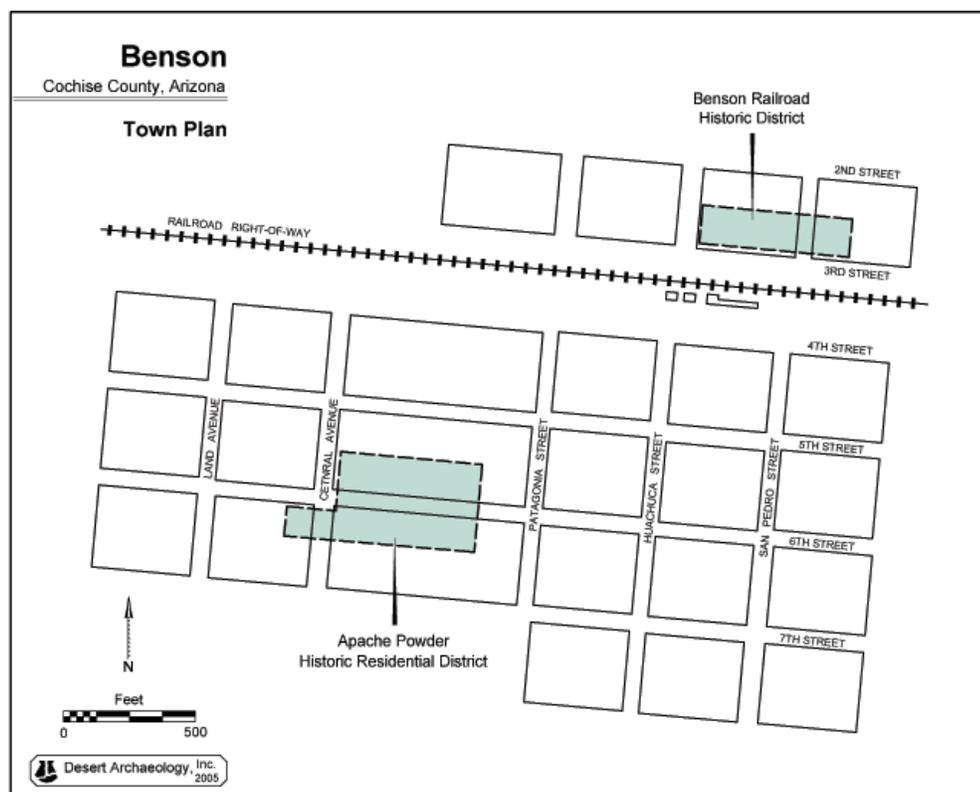


Fig. 13.2 – Benson town plan with referenced areas highlighted. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology Inc.

Powder Company, a nitroglycerin explosives manufacturing plant, opened a few miles southeast of Benson and greatly stimulated the economy.

### Railroad Historic District

This National Register-listed district (1880-1910) reflects the city's railroad era. It is located just north of the railroad tracks on E. 3rd Street near the site of the recently re-created freight and passenger depot. The district consists of ten residences (fig. 3.3) and one hotel.

The simplest structures are vernacular frame dwellings like the front-gabled "shotgun" example at 223 E. 3rd St.

The Colonial Revival style Hotel Arnold (fig. 3.4), 253 E. 3rd Street, was allegedly built around 1879 by a retired engineer and his wife, Mr. and Mrs. Arnold A. McGinnis, to accommodate railroad employees, passengers, commercial travelers and salespeople. The Double Roofed House, 285 E. 3rd St., is the largest known example of its type in Arizona and a unique example of the Colonial Revival Style (fig. 13.5). The double-roofing technique was used to provide insulation from the heat. The Roadmaster's House, 305 E. 3rd St., is the only remaining example of a large Queen Anne style house in Benson, somewhat modified. Strongly associated with the railroad, this residence is one of Benson's most significant buildings. The roadmaster's role was to repair and maintain the railroad tracks and right-of-way.

Apache Powder Historic Residential District



*Fig. 15.3 – Railroad District streetscape showing pyramidal dwelling, Benson. Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst.*



*Fig. 15.4 – Hotel Arnold, Benson. Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst.*



*Fig. 15.5 – Double-Roofed House, Benson. Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst.*



*Fig. 15.6 – Typical Apache Powder District bungalow, Benson. Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst.*



*Fig. 15.7 – Apache Park, Benson. Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst.*

This district is associated with Benson's 1920s era. In 1922, Charles Mills, founder of the former Valley National Bank, built the Apache Powder Company near Benson. At one time, this company, known today as Apache Nitrogen Products, Inc., was the largest independent producer of nitroglycerin explosives in the United States. Apache, whose stockholders were the mines, was able to produce powder at a much lower cost than companies elsewhere, thereby stimulating the local economy. Apache employed hundreds of people, even during the Depression.

This residential district was built on land purchased in 1925 by the company for its management personnel and comprises nine residences and a park (figs. 13.6 and 13.7). Listed in the National Register in 1994, the district has good examples of styles popular in the 1920s. There are six front-gabled residences in the Craftsman Bungalow style. Two typical Bungalows can be seen at 143 and 189 W. 6th St. A Mission Revival-influenced building, which once served as Evacuation Hospital No. 1 for the company, can be found at 201 W. 6th St. The house at 243 W. 6th St. is a good example of the Spanish Colonial Revival style.

(The preceding text about Benson has been excerpted from City of Benson's "Benson Historic Walking Tour" [1995].)

## St. David

Departing Benson, the tour crosses the San Pedro River just before St. David, eight miles away along Route 80. St. David was founded by Mormons in 1877, and today, as no doubt historically, it is a community of small farmsteads. Mormonism was an agrarian movement and the most successful of all 19th century religious utopias founded in the United States. Mormons endeavored to build stable, orderly, exclusive agricultural communities that embodied the vir-

tues of hard work and cooperation. Their settlement strategy stressed the colonization of vacant regions through small, trade-linked, self-sufficient towns. Mormons expanded into Arizona in 1873 and settlements eventually reached from Fredonia near Utah to St. David in the San Pedro Valley.<sup>2</sup> Today, as can be seen from the road, St. David's residents raise cattle, vegetables, corn, grapes, apples, and pecans. The town is also a retirement and recreational destination, as the presence of mobile homes shows. The most imposing buildings in town are the Church of Latter Day Saints and the school.

## Tombstone

Located along State Route 80 at a distance of 33 miles southeast of Benson, Tombstone lies at an elevation of 4,539'. It occupies a relatively flat site once known as Goose Flats in desert-scrub, hilly terrain. Nearby to the southwest, the silver-bearing Tombstone Hills are caused by a local upheaval of porphyry capped by limestone. This mineral belt extends about eight miles east and west and twenty-five miles to the south into the Warren Mining District.<sup>3</sup> On approaching

Tombstone, one sees a large sign advertising the OK Corral, hinting that the nearby tourist town capitalizes on its lawless frontier heritage rather than its mining town history, a story of mine discovery and closure, town growth, and community perseverance despite drastic economic downturns.

In recognition of its historic significance, in 1962 Tombstone was designated a National Historic Landmark and the community was given the task of symbolizing that history for future generations. What transpired, however, did not exactly reflect historic truthfulness. In its rather stark desert setting, Tombstone for decades has been most noteworthy for the myth, created by television serials, western novels, and magazine articles, that it is a place where heroic deeds were performed.

To foster tourism drawn by this pop-culture myth, the community has long struggled to re-establish its main street commercial district (fig. 13.8), location of the OK Corral, Crystal Palace Saloon, Bird Cage Theatre, and other sites of public renown. By the late 1980s, Tombstone finally attained its goal of restoring a six-block district in the image of the 1880s.<sup>4</sup> With consider-

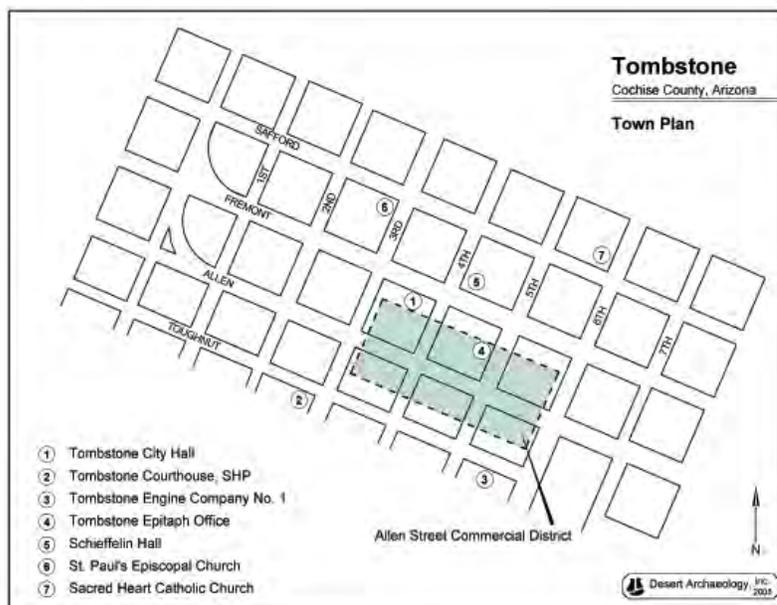


Fig. 15.8— Tombstone town plan with tour sites highlighted. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology Inc.

able re-building, porch and boardwalk addition, etc., the resulting restoration is a romanticized one. Focused solely on tourism, the district has lost its true identity. The commercial center completely ignores the community that such a town center once served; gone are the post office, drug store and types of shops once used by the citizens of Tombstone.<sup>5</sup>

### **Allen Street Commercial District**

The first tour stop will be near Tombstone's Allen Street Commercial District (fig. 13.9). Originally developed by entrepreneurs, this small historic core consisted largely of modest, false-front, one- or two-part commercial blocks with dominant storefronts; these were block types found elsewhere in America at the time. Many were built of adobe. Tombstone's speculative commercial district was concentrated largely on Allen Street, its "Main Street" between 3rd St. and 6th St., and the streets that cross Allen. Today's restored commercial district is included on the tour largely as an example of romanticized historic preservation driven by popular culture.

Tombstone does feature several nearby, historic institutional buildings of merit. Not built on Allen Street, they include the two-story, brick City Hall, Tombstone Courthouse, Engine Company No. 1, St. Paul's Episcopal Church, and Sacred Heart Catholic Church. A good example of a commercial building is the Tombstone Epitaph Newspaper building on Fifth Street. Also, in 1996, 90 mostly residential, historic resources located in the historic grid plats were inventoried by Johns & Strittmatter Inc. Most of these properties are modest, single-story residences of stuccoed adobe, wood siding-sheathed frame, or stuccoed frame construction. Most of the properties pertain to the Anglo-American tradition with a good representation of vernacular types including hall-and-parlor, pyramidal, and gable-front-and-wing cottages. They are concentrated

on the blocks north of Fremont Street and west of Third Street.

### **1. Tombstone City Hall**

Tombstone City Hall, on the south side of Fremont Street between Third and Fourth Streets, served as the government seat after it was built in 1882. In its early days, the building also housed the jail and firehouse. The building features unusual Italianate detailing.

### **2. Tombstone Courthouse**

On Toughnut St. is the imposing, Italianate style Tombstone Courthouse (fig. 13.10). It was designated a State Historic Park in 1959. Built in 1882 at a cost of nearly \$50,000, the stylish building symbolized law and stability. It housed the sheriff, recorder, treasurer, and board of supervisors. The jail was located at the rear. In 1904, the building was enlarged by an addition to the rear in the same style. When Bisbee became county seat in 1929, use of the building declined. In 1946 an ill-fated hotel conversion attempt badly damaged the building's integrity. After the building was deeded to Arizona State Parks in 1959, the state undertook major restoration and renovation work.

### **3. Tombstone Engine Company No. 1**

Tombstone Engine Company No. 1 is also located on the south side of Toughnut Street, between Fifth and Sixth Streets (fig. 13.11). It is a plastered adobe, vernacular building with a simple, sculpted parapet and a typical, large, centrally-located door. Tombstone's first fire department was organized in 1880 and this building followed in 1881. The building has suffered damage due to its location on unstable ground over mine shafts but restoration efforts have been able to keep it intact. Today it is the Tombstone Senior Citizen Center.

### **4. Tombstone Epitaph Office**



*Fig. 15.9 – Allen Street Commercial District, Tombstone. Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst.*



*Fig. 15.10 – Tombstone Courthouse. Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst.*



*Fig. 15.11 – Tombstone Engine Co. No. 1. Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst.*



*Fig. 15.12 – Tombstone Epitaph Office. Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst.*



*Fig. 15.13 – St. Paul's Episcopal Church, Tombstone Courtesy of Janet Parkhurst.*

Around 1930 the *Tombstone Epitaph*, the community's first newspaper, moved into the *Tombstone Epitaph Office* (fig. 13.12). This building had been a miner's union hall. The *Epitaph*, established by John Clum on May 1, 1880, is published to this day, although it is now produced elsewhere. The building is a modest vernacular type known as the one-part commercial block, a type that is one-story with a prominent street-level storefront and a space for signage above. The large storefront windows and glazed transom band above are typical.

### **5. Shieffelin Hall**

Located on the northeast corner of Fremont and Fourth Streets, Schieffelin Hall was built in 1881 by Albert Schieffelin, the brother of pioneer miner Edward Schieffelin. This sturdy, two-story, plastered adobe building housed an auditorium and four rooms on its first floor. The second floor was used by various Masonic orders.<sup>6</sup> It is still used for city council meetings, film showings, plays, and variety performances. The building has a very simple, side-gabled vernacular form with a prominent wall gable on its primary facade.

### **6. St. Paul's Episcopal Church**

On the southwest corner of Safford and Third Streets is St. Paul's Episcopal Church, a Gothic Revival style building that opened for worship in June 1882 (fig. 13.13). Allegedly, it is the oldest Protestant church in Arizona still on its original site and used for its original purpose. Its founding is associated with the seminarian Endicott Peabody, who later founded and headed the famous Groton School for boys.<sup>7</sup> Like many of early Tombstone's buildings, it was built of adobe. The bell tower was later rebuilt of brick. It still retains its original stained glass windows, woodwork, and some light fixtures.

### **7. Sacred Heart Catholic Church**

Sacred Heart Catholic Church is located on the northeast corner of Safford and Sixth Streets. The first church constructed in Tombstone still stands in the complex. It is a simple, two-story adobe building built in 1881 that later became the rectory. In 1882, a larger wooden church was constructed on the premises. In 1947, a modern church was added, and the two original buildings were retained for other functions. The complex is listed in the National Register of Historic Places.

(Some of the preceding has been excerpted from *Tales of Tombstone* (2004), a publication of the Tombstone Chamber of Commerce. Discussions of style and vernacular type are by the author.)

## Warren

Warren is located on the upper reaches of a broad, gently sloping, alluvial fan southeast of the Lavender Pit. The community is considered to be a very literal interpretation of the City Beautiful movement's ideals. In the West, although the mining industry was responsible for the development of countless haphazard settlements of variable longevity, copper mining created some of the largest and most permanent company towns. Especially noteworthy were three model copper

communities where beautification was an issue: Ajo and Warren, Arizona, and Tyrone, New Mexico.<sup>8</sup> Beautification was one of the paternalistic policies applied by the Calumet and Arizona Mining Company to ensure workers' welfare and a productive environment.

The City Beautiful movement was the beginning of comprehensive city planning in the United States. The movement evolved from two basic concepts, civic improvement and urban park development, which merged into a form of civic

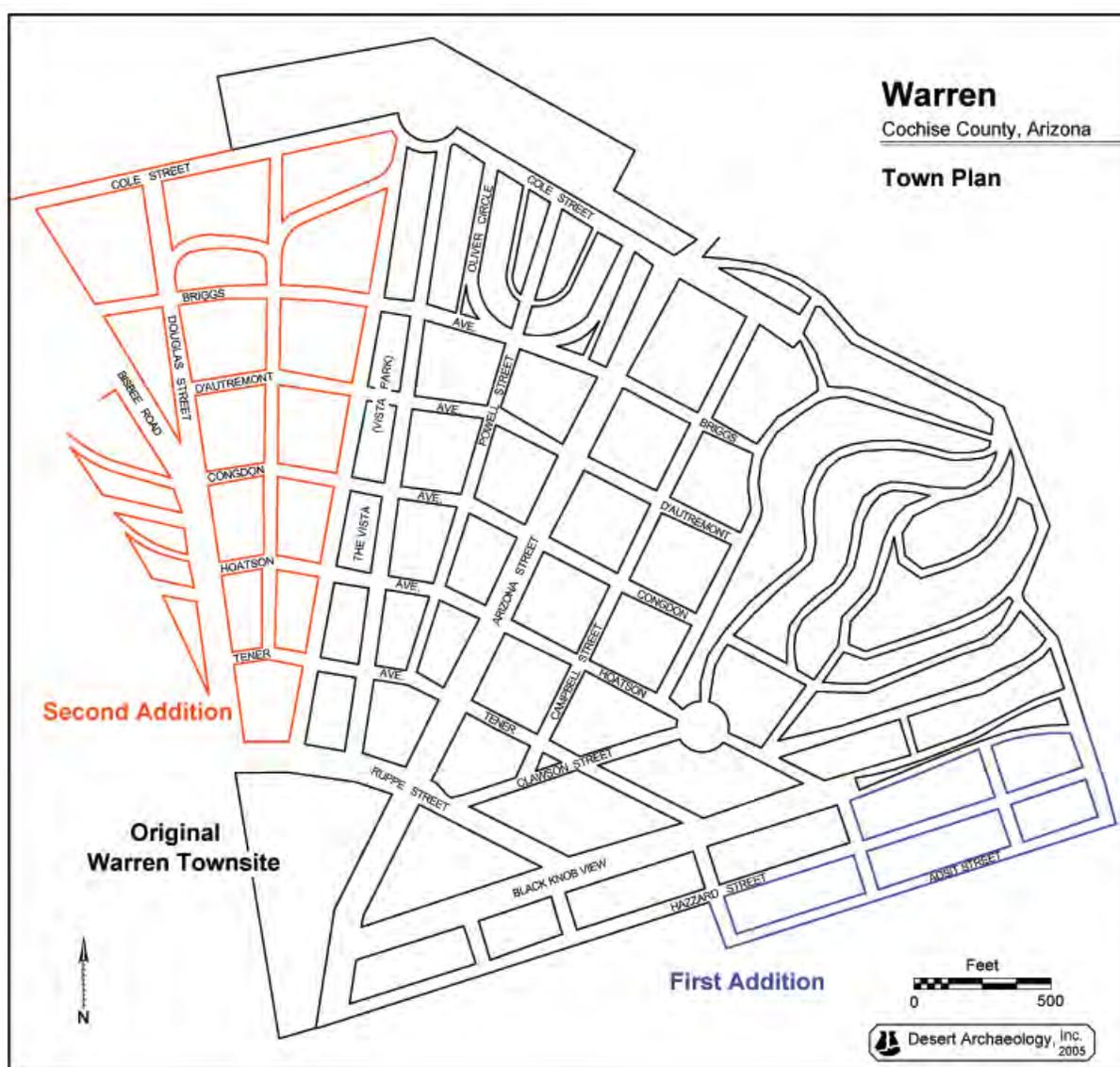


Fig. 15.14 – Warren town plan showing the different phases of development. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology Inc.

idealism that swept the nation in the period 1899-1920. The City Beautiful movement combined a romantic aesthetic with underlying comprehensive qualities of utilitarianism, social responsibility, and unity. City Beautiful aesthetics linked natural beauty, naturalistic construction, and classicism. Site layouts were commonly Neoclassical in their axiality and formality.<sup>9</sup>

### **Vista Park**

The formal core of Warren's City Beautiful plan is dominated by a central north-south axis, embraced on either side by nearly symmetrical, radiating roadways and boulevards (fig. 13.14). The central axis, closed on the north by the former mining company general manager's mansion and on the south by a baseball park, is formed by seven-block-long, 160'-wide Vista Park, flanked on either side by 60'-wide, tree-lined boulevards.<sup>10</sup> Located at a higher elevation, characteristic of social stratification, and serving as the northern focal point of Vista Park, is the Walter Douglas House, a mansion built in 1908 and designed by noteworthy architect Henry Trost of Tucson/El Paso. In the Mission Revival style, it is constructed of reinforced concrete. Most of Warren's larger, historic, managerial class residences are located at this end of the townsite.

### **Arizona Street**

The bulk of the community's commercial and administrative buildings are located on Arizona Street, a side thoroughfare two blocks east of the principal park axis. In contrast to that at Ajo, the Warren town center occupies a secondary location and has never filled in significantly. Unlike Bisbee's densely packed commercial heart, Warren's center lacks the feeling of a once vibrant hub of activity.

## **Bisbee**

Bisbee, Arizona is located in the southeastern portion of the state, seven miles from the international border with Mexico. Nestled in a narrow valley of the Mule Mountains, it lies at an elevation of 5,300'. The City of Bisbee today constitutes a linear pattern of eleven related but discrete settlements situated along a broadly curving nine-mile portion of State Highways 80 and 92. Like other mining towns in the American West, Bisbee developed in isolation from other urban centers but quickly became a large community; in fact, it was Arizona's largest community in the first decade of the 20th century and is still the county seat.

Unlike Ajo, Tubac, and other mining towns of the Southwest, Bisbee has no record of Native American or Spanish mining. Bisbee's original, and until World War II, only, reason for existence was mining, and its mining history is intertwined with that of the Phelps Dodge mining company. Most of Bisbee's mineral production came from a tract of ore-bearing land, two by three miles in surface area, and 4,000 feet deep. From this small area, nearly 8 billion pounds of copper, 355 million pounds of zinc, 324 million pounds of lead, 100 million ounces of silver, 8 eight million ounces of gold, and 11 million pounds of manganese were produced from its origins in the late 1870s until the end of operations in 1981.

The oldest of the eleven Bisbee settlements, now known as "Old Bisbee," is scattered over the steep mountainsides in a pattern reflective of the rapid, organic growth of mining towns in the American West. In contrast to Ajo, Phelps-Dodge's other large mining operation in southern Arizona, Bisbee was never a company town, although the Phelps-Dodge Company sponsored most of its civic institutions and public architecture. Throughout its history of intensive mining activity, Bisbee's geographic features were

manipulated and exploited to suit the pragmatic needs of the mining operations. As an example of this transformation of Bisbee's physical landscape, its major, man-made topographic feature, the nearby Lavender Pit Mine, was created by literally removing a 900' mountain, Sacramento Hill, from the landscape, and then excavating a hole in the ground through open pit mining. This is what Richard Francaviglia calls a "classic landscape of subtraction," a place where a total of 380 millions tons of material was removed.<sup>11</sup>

Bisbee's settlement was guided by the limitations of its natural setting expanding upwards along the drainageways of the two canyons, Mule Gulch and Brewery Gulch, that intersect at the area of mining activities. A trail following the line of Mule Gulch was called Tombstone Canyon Road as it led to Tombstone, Bisbee's closest urban neighbor. In the late 1890s and early 1900s after both fire and flood ravaged Bisbee's early central business district along an unpaved Main Street, brick and concrete construction replaced the earlier wood frame buildings.

From the early 1880s, Brewery Gulch developed as a secondary commercial district. The lower end of the Gulch, where it flows into Tombstone Canyon, evolved into a dense concentration of activity on both sides of the street, with restaurants, breweries, newspaper offices, Bisbee's stock exchange, and the town's first lumberyard. By 1890, the street had further developed into Bisbee's tenderloin district, which included saloons, gambling houses, opium dens, rooming houses, and houses of prostitution. The street boasted the reputation of being "the liveliest spot between El Paso and San Francisco."

## Residential Development

### **The Infrastructure of Hillside Development: Terraces, Retaining Walls, and Stairs**

Typically, Bisbee's commercial or public buildings were constructed on or near the relatively flat areas at the floors of canyons. Except for this development on the level but limited canyon floors, Bisbee was built on sloping terrain. Once the relatively flat canyon floors were all taken up, builders had to climb higher to find land on which to build, and residential buildings were typically constructed on sloping, less desirable land.

Early on, Bisbee builders realized that, without modification, steeply pitched sites were all but impossible to use as home sites. At this point, builders adopted the technique of terracing the hillsides, excavating a series of long "benches" into the slope of each hill at regular vertical intervals and using retaining walls at each "step" between levels (fig. 13.15). Thus the layout of sloping residential areas was conceptualized and carried out in three dimensions: these areas were laid out as much vertically, or "in section," as they were horizontally, or "in plan." This approach is analogous to that of underground mining in "drifts," (regularly spaced parallel horizontal tunnels) or that of open pit mining in "benches" (regularly spaced horizontal terraces). It comes as no surprise that this type of useful technology transfer took place in the context of city building in the mining community of Bisbee.

The oldest retaining walls still standing in Bisbee are made of stone with the most beautiful and durable examples built by miners who were imported from Cornwall, the only region of the world known for this level of beauty and precision in its stone walls. Another early type of retaining wall is the "cribbed" timber wall similar to the timber-framed bulkheads used in under-

ground mining. Over time, as the timbers of the few extant examples of this type of retaining wall have become broken, they have been reinforced with vertical pipe columns. After about 1910, most of Bisbee's retaining walls were constructed in board-formed mass or reinforced concrete.

In an overall terraced settlement such as Bisbee, a difficulty arises when planning a system of street numbers: with house numbers determined horizontally along a canyon or a street, how would it be possible to distinguish between the vertical levels? In underground or surface mining, levels are designated by numbers, starting with the lowest number at the top and working down to the highest number on the lowest level. Bisbee's answer has been to designate "levels," as in mining, but using letters rather than numbers and reversing the typical mine order, so that letters from the beginning of the alphabet are at the lower levels and the alphabet unrolls upwards. Thus, starting from a given house number at the lowest level, which has no attached letter, a house directly above it on the next "bench" would have the same number plus the letter "A," and so on. So far, the town's highest letter is "H." In this manner, Bisbee's horizontal and vertical patterns come together.

Due to the topography of Bisbee, there are many private as well as public, or community, stairs connecting two or more streets or providing access to multiple properties. Virtually all of these were initially built of wood. In the 1920s and 1930s, most of the public stairs were transformed from wood to concrete, including those built as part of the Works Projects Administration (WPA) 1938 Bisbee campaign. Many of these WPA stairs still look new, built as they were to a uniformly high construction standard with carefully finished concrete surfaces. They are consistently "signed" with standard "USA|WPA" logos which are cast into the floor of their top and bottom landings.

### Neighborhoods

Most of Bisbee's earliest residential development between 1880-1900 occurred directly north of the commercial-industrial center along the north-south axis of Brewery Gulch. In the decades that followed, much of the town's residential development growth shifted away from Brewery Gulch on a westward path along the east-west axis of Tombstone Canyon. This evolution began with areas of mixed upscale and middle class residential development in hilly neighborhoods such as Quality Hill, Higgins Hill, and Mason Hill just



*Fig. 15.15 – Miller Hill, Bisbee, c1905 showing the terracing, retaining walls and stairways required to accommodate hillside development. Courtesy of Harris Sobin/Durrant*

west of the center. Growth then continued during the subsequent decades with more middle and working class neighborhoods developing in the same westerly direction as far as the lower slopes of the Mule Mountains.

In early Bisbee, residential areas and individual houses were usually linked by dirt ramps and trails, or the occasional wood stair. Neighborhoods or areas with which residents identified their homes in Bisbee were often denominated in terms of the most prominent nearby topographical feature, usually a hill or a canyon. Topography helped define these neighborhoods to such an extent that, by the turn of the century, at least 13 topographically defined and distinct neighborhoods existed (fig. 13.16). Also at that time, residential streets began to appear, particularly in those more hilly parts of town located above the relatively flat canyon bottoms. Even with the advent of streets, most residential addresses remained

associated with named hills or canyons, rather than with streets or roads.

Up through 1904, when the Bisbee smelter closed down following the start-up of a new smelter at Douglas, 15 miles away, the air quality in Bisbee was the direct cause of numerous respiratory-related deaths. Thereafter, air quality in Bisbee (and especially in Tombstone Canyon) improved noticeably and within a few years residential development of Tombstone Canyon began to catch up with that of Brewery Gulch. Another factor that increased upper Tombstone Canyon's residential desirability was the creation of a trolley line in 1908 and a decreased risk of flooding after completion of Mule Gulch Channel in 1912.

Over time, many of Bisbee's hills or canyons acquired distinct ethnic or class identities, including Irish, Italian, Cornish, Mexican, and Serbian; as Richard Shelton remarks, "the ravines often marked barriers that were more than topographical."<sup>12</sup> Francaviglia has identified this phenome-

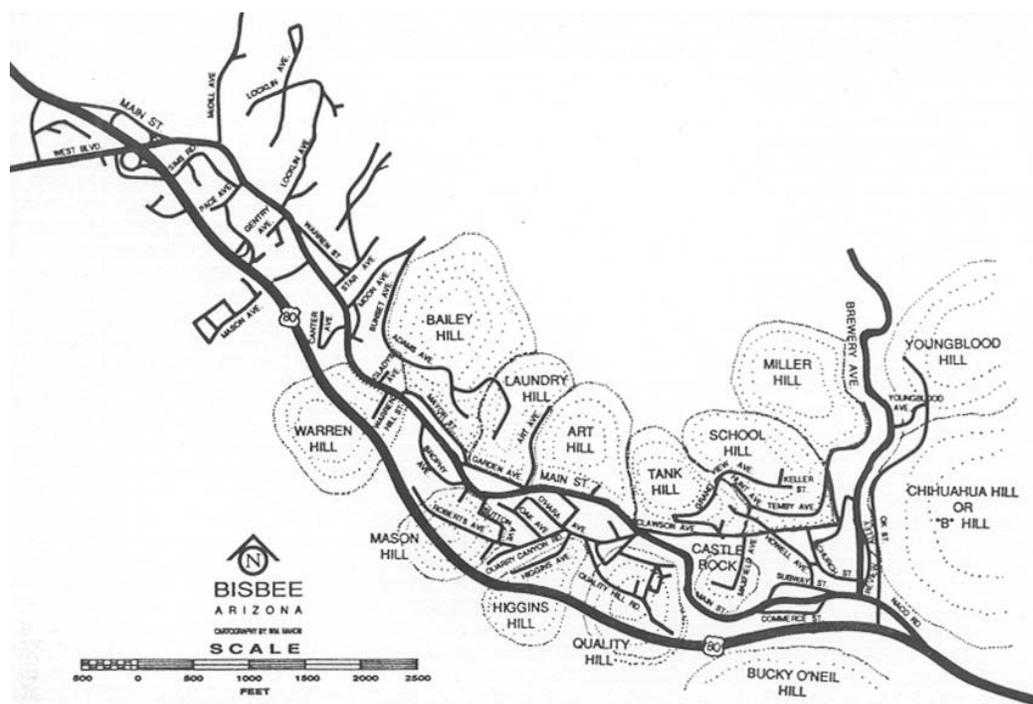


Fig. 13.16 – Map of named hills, now residential neighborhoods, Bisbee. Courtesy of Harris Sobin/Durrant.

non as “stratification,” a process common in the development of mining landscapes by which the houses of mining company managers, superintendents, geologists, and bosses are identifiable by their size, explicit stylistic expression, and their location in identifiable enclaves on a hillside or hilltop location (see the essay by James E. Ayres and Janet H. Parkhurst). In contrast, mine workers lived in less prominent neighborhoods or sections of town; their dwellings share morphological characteristics, including building and roof forms, with the higher-class residences but lack the applied styling of selected ornamental details, often imported from other locations. The similarities that are observable can be attributed to the existence of a limited palette of house types available to both classes. Also, with the exception of techniques borrowed from mining engineering, Bisbee lacked access to more than a very basic level of expertise in building construction. Other than during the brief boom periods in Bisbee, most owners were unable to afford anything beyond the kind of simple, functional buildings that typified the town’s major period of growth from the mid-1880s to the late 1920s.

These factors led to the clustered, village-like appearance of the Quality Hill/Higgins Hill/Mason Hill area of Bisbee in the areas west of Castle Rock and south of Tombstone Canyon which were built up in the 1895-1905 period (see tours 1 and 2). Some houses were constructed with pyramidal or hipped roofs, while others were larger versions of the earlier gable-front-and-wing or cross-gable house. Another group of such larger houses was constructed along upper Tombstone Canyon Road during the 1915-1925 period. As building sites along Tombstone Canyon itself began to fill up, lower middle class and working class development continued up into the smaller canyons radiating from it. The lower ends of each of these smaller canyons ran into Tombstone Canyon. These “side” canyons

include Moon, Spring, Star, Art, and Wood Canyons. Along each one, development typically began at the base, along Tombstone Canyon itself, then climbed uphill; the smaller houses of lesser quality, at or near the less accessible top of the canyon, were often owned or inhabited by the poorest working class residents. The rate of construction in Bisbee declined after 1916 because of a declining population and very few new structures of any kind were built after about 1930.

A number of varied working class or lower middle class pocket communities existed. Examples include the neighborhood of laundresses and their families, mostly Irish, who lived and worked on Laundry Hill. Other examples include the two Mexican/Mexican-American ethnic enclaves off upper Tombstone Canyon: Spring Canyon and Star Canyon. Still other such Hispanic precincts were Chihuahua Hill, just to the east of and overlooking the business district, and the Zacatecas Canyon area at the northernmost end of Brewery Gulch. Other ethnic enclaves included a Serbian area on the hillside above central OK Street.

### **Residential Typologies**

Bisbee is a textbook for the study of vernacular “folk” house typologies during an important period of development at the end of the 19th and beginning of the 20th centuries (see the discussion in Anne M. Nequette’s essay). These vernacular buildings are classified by “building type” based on footprint (e.g., rectangular versus L-shaped or other more complex floor plan types) and roof type (e.g., gabled, hipped, or flat). The morphological types are based on the appearance of the buildings as seen from the street.

While most of Bisbee’s residential building stock presents examples of national folk vernacular architecture, many other buildings reflect design trends that prevailed at the time of their construction; they may be described as partially “styled,” for example through detailing which reflects a

recognized historic architectural style. Although architects were rarely involved in Bisbee building projects, styles nonetheless infiltrated the vernacular via plans or elevations that appeared in magazines or pattern books. For example, no fully realized examples of the Queen Anne/American Victorian style can be found in Bisbee, but a large number of side-gabled vernacular examples are extant, with porches supported by classically derived turned columns and decorative “gingerbread” spindlework or with decoratively shingled gable-ends, features typical of the Queen Anne style. Among the varied stylistic influences are Queen Anne, Craftsman, Neo-Classical Revival, Spanish Colonial/Mission Revival, and Gothic Revival.

In the 2003 survey done of Bisbee’s residential architecture, 74 distinct building types were found, representing variations on standard vernacular nomenclature. The larger categories of gable and pyramidal types represent the majority of vernacular building types found in Bisbee (fig. 13.17). Morphologically speaking, four of these vernacular types, the side-gabled, the gable-front, the gable-front-and wing (or L-house), and the

cross-gable (or T-house), can all be classified as variations on or combinations of basic rectangular volumes topped by a gabled or pitched roof. The simpler, single volume varieties appear typically earlier in time. The more complex, intersecting, or multiple-volume varieties typically appear later. All represent simple, gable-topped forms that are relatively economical to construct. While other typological groupings exist in Bisbee, including bungalow, shed-roofed, flat-roofed, I-houses, and even Sonoran houses, their representation in the overall residential landscape is minor.

## Building Materials and Construction Technologies

As is the case with many Arizona cities and towns, the use of different building materials and building techniques in Bisbee coincided with different periods in the town’s development. The earliest surviving structures are of adobe or stone, corresponding to the earliest stages of Bisbee’s development, from 1878 to about 1895. Finished lumber put in its appearance soon after the beginning of this earliest stage of the area’s history, first competing with adobe, and then replacing

*Fig. 13.17 – Hipped- and pyramidal-roofed houses, Higgins Hill, Bisbee. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*



it. By 1895, adobe was no longer used in Bisbee, except for a few houses in ethnically Hispanic neighborhoods. During the era of expansion from 1884 to 1916, and following a series of major fires in the business district, brick became available in Bisbee, but was seldom used in the residential areas due to cost and is most visible in the commercial district. Bisbee's residential stock was largely wood frame due to the cost of delivering materials to steep sites and to existing construction skills.

### Wood/Frame Construction

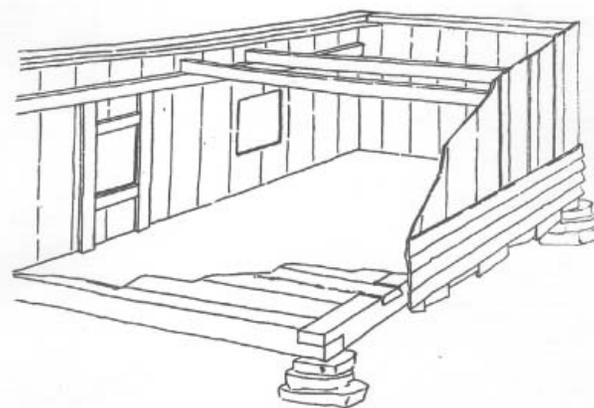
The majority of construction in the residential areas of Bisbee is wood frame construction, most of which is sheathed in some type of horizontal clapboarding. The clapboards might be of wide, narrow, or standard (4-inch) width. From the evidence of older photographs of Bisbee buildings, the earliest type of clapboarding utilized appears to have been the narrow type. In this style of sheathing, each actual component board is five inches wide, but is milled to give the appearance of two narrow, separate boards, each

two inches high. The style is sometimes referred to as a "false bevel drop" style of sheathing.

There is evidence that there was at least one local source for "precut" houses in Bisbee: Lemuel Shattuck's lumber-yard, located at 68 Brewery Avenue, advertised precut houses for sale prior to 1900. This follows the national trend established by companies such as Sears Roebuck which sold "mail order" houses from 1895 to at least 1940. Unfortunately, identifying examples of these houses will require more research.

### Box Construction

The terms "box" and "single wall construction" are both used to describe a technique of frameless vertical-plank construction (fig. 13.18). Box construction is not identified as a clearly differentiable residential building technique in the manuals customarily used to identify American houses (e.g., V. & L. McAlester). To date, American vernacular architecture studies dealing with box construction have mostly documented the appearance of this phenomenon in the southern states. These studies stress that "box" construction provided a simple means of building small



*Fig. 13.18 – Drawing of typical “box” house construction, Bisbee. Note the vertical boards nailed to perimeter sills, with vertical joints sealed with battens (upper walls) or horizontal siding (below). Window openings are made either with or without framing. Note the absence of conventional studs or sheathing. From Mitchell, Brown and Swanda. Courtesy of Harris Sobin/Durrant after Mitchell, Brown and Swanda*

houses quickly and economically. None to date has dealt with its appearance in Arizona.

While Bisbee's very earliest structures were of canvas or adobe, once transportation was sufficiently improved, power-sawn planks and boards became available. Bisbee historian William Newkirk calls the modest working-class houses of Bisbee ca. 1884 "shacks," not houses, and goes on to state that "the most common construction material was vertical siding of rough lumber," presumably referring to box construction. Photographic analysis also suggests that box construction was the earliest mode of building in wood, and that, after adobe, its wood was the earliest material used in Bisbee.

This kind of construction in Bisbee using wooden planks did without all of the usual posts, studs, blocking, and bracing used in typical wall framing. Instead it used vertical 12"-wide rough-sawn boards which were butted tightly together to form load-bearing walls and were nailed into wooden sill and plate members. The joints between these nominal 1" by 12" (3/4" x 11") boards were sealed with narrow wooden battens, typically of 7/8" x 2" or 2-5/8" dimensions. In Bisbee, most of these battens were simple rectangles in cross section, but elegant profiled examples can occasionally be seen in the earliest examples, for instance using pairs of mirrored Roman Cyma Reversa molding profiles on the two edges.

(This text was largely excerpted from Durrant/Harris Sobin, *Old Bisbee Historic Residential Survey* [2002] and Wilson, et al., "National Register Nomination for Bisbee Historic District [Central Business District]" [1980])

## Tours

The following tours are intended to introduce the reader to the variety of vernacular buildings described above. With the exception of public accessible buildings, the buildings listed may be

viewed from the exterior only. Please respect the privacy of the residents.

### Tour 1 – Higgins Hill

(from St. Patrick's Church, proceed up Quarry Canyon Avenue—passing the Mission Revival Loretto Academy—to O'Hare and Oak Avenues, then go back on Quarry Canyon Avenue to the church)

Higgins Hill offers a comprehensive collection of gable and pyramidal house types including the following outstanding examples:

**1. 310 O'Hare Ave:** This is a classic wood framed, two-story, four-square house with a raised first floor and a two-story porch at its front facade, the top floor of which has been enclosed. It also has a shed dormer with diamond-pane fenestration.

**2. 314 O'Hare Ave:** This is a mass-plan house with a wood framed, gambrel-roofed structure, and a front porch recessed along part of its width. An octagonal dormer and a gabled dormer at front are connected by a shed dormer.

**3. 319 O'Hare Ave:** This wood frame house combines the five-room pyramidal subtype with the gable-on-hip roof variant (fig. 13.20). With this configuration, the front porch is recessed into one half of the facade, creating an asymmetrical front which is easily mistaken for a partially enclosed full-width porch. The "missing room," equal to the porch in depth, is then added at the rear of the building, on the same side of the plan as the recessed porch.

**4. 400a O'Hare St:** This is an example of a house sheathed in wooden clapboards of the standard width.

**5. 405 Oak Ave:** A classic Craftsman Bungalow.

**6. 315 Oak Ave:** Except for a small shed roof addition at the rear, this wood frame house is a good example of the archetypal four-room plan

type. The pyramidal roof is truncated, and the house has a full-width hipped porch on the street facade (albeit with unfortunate wrought iron supports). Detailing is very basic; the roofing is rolled asphalt, covering original shakes.

**7. 316 Oak Ave:** The three-story Brophy House was built in 1900 with an L-shape plan. As manager of the Bisbee branch of the Copper Queen Company Store, Michael Brophy held an important position in turn-of-the-century Bisbee. In this house, the re-entrant corner space between the building's two wings was originally filled with a fully enclosed one-story space, surrounded on two sides by a hipped-roof porch. When compared to earlier, simpler gabled types, this composition, with its visual complexity and overall asymmetry, establishes a clearly intentionally picturesque image. Queen Anne influence is seen in the detailing, e.g., in the turned porch columns, the decorative wood en shakes in the gable ends, and a large bay window in the gable facing the street.

**8. 306 Oak Ave:** This early brick house, constructed in 1895, is an example of a pyramidal cottage but with some uncommon features, including cross-gable dormers on each side of the roof and a raised main floor. The house also has a full-width shed-roofed porch at its street facade, supported by Queen Anne Style turned columns. The entry is emphasized by a brickwork bay at the front door, which suggests that the house may have the unusual feature of a center hall plan.

**9. 302a Quarry Canyon:** This L-shaped, two-story, wood frame house was designed in 1905 by one of Bisbee's early architects, Frederick Hurst. Hurst initially came to Bisbee as an architect for Phelps-Dodge, later going into local practice on his own. Since the house was built on a relatively small site, it was designed with a more compact footprint, including a two-story open porch at its north side. It, too, shares the Queen Anne detailing of the other L-shaped houses on Higgins Hill,



*Fig. 15.20 – 519 O'Hare Ave, Higgins Hill; an example of a gable-on-hip roof type with a front porch integrated within the roof form. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

including a large bay window at the raised first floor.

### **Tour 2 – Quality Hill**

(from St. Patrick’s Church, proceed down Quarry Canyon Avenue to the Art Deco Cochise County Courthouse and Ledge Avenue, then take Cross Avenue to Quality Hill Road and back down to the church)

Quality Hill was the site of many prominent civic and residential buildings, as well as a number of WPA stairways.

**10. Cochise County Courthouse.** Designed by Tucson architect Roy Place in 1930-31, this is a classic example of Depression-era Art Deco public architecture, from the facade composition to the intricate artwork reflecting the copper themes of once prosperous Bisbee (fig. 13.21). Make sure you go inside the building to see the extent of decorative detailing throughout the public spaces.

**11. Bisbee Women’s Club,** on the SW corner of Ledge Ave. and Cross Ave.: The club building, designed in 1902 by local architect Frederick Hurst, is a long hip-roofed rectangle, with details such as the projecting rafters, a hip-roofed entry porch, and a hipped dormer window borrowed from the Craftsman style.

**12. Quality Hill Road Plaza,** located at the top of Cross Ave.: This informal paved space was once known as Queen Place in recognition of the important role played by the Copper Queen Consolidated Mining Company as developer of housing for its elite. The space still functions as an informal center for the Quality Hill Neighborhood. Company-built houses that face onto Quality Hill Plaza include the Sherman House, the Johnson House, and the Presbyterian Manse, or church rectory.

**13. WPA Stairways:** Other Quality Hill residences can be seen by walking on one of two



*Fig. 13.21 – Cochise County Courthouse. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery.*

WPA stairways. The first, Quality Hill Walk (Site No. 685), leads from Quality Hill Rd. down to Ledge Ave., near the Cochise County Courthouse, and past a cluster of wood frame houses (fig. 13.22). The second, and longer, stairway leads from the upper extension of Ledge Ave. all the way down to Tombstone Canyon Rd. near the upper end of the commercial district and Tour 3.

### Tour 3 – Commercial District

(from the Bisbee Mining and Historical Museum on Main Street, proceed up to Howell Avenue around the YWCA to Shearer Avenue to Subway Street to Tombstone Canyon Road, then return to Main Street and go back to the Museum; another group of commercial and civic buildings can be found up Brewery Gulch Road, OK Street, and Naco Road)

Bisbee has a still-viable, well-developed, dense commercial core, largely concentrated in its canyon zone. This district features a remarkable array of early 20th-century, ornamented, false-front, two-part commercial blocks built of brick and stone. Along Bisbee's narrow, curving, inclined streets, these buildings form dense-walled streetscapes that give a "European" impression.

**14. Bisbee Mining & Historical Museum** (formerly the Copper Queen Consolidated Mining Company General Office Building), located on Copper Queen Plaza: This 1897 building is Bisbee's oldest extant public structure. The two-story brick building contains restrained Queen Anne stylistic references common to that era.

**15. Copper Queen Hotel**, 7-13 Howell Ave.: Constructed in 1902 by the Copper Queen Consolidated Mining Company, this four-story brick and stucco hotel was built to resemble an Italian villa. It housed visiting company



*Fig. 15.22 – Quality Hill Walk, one of many WPA stairways in Bisbee. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

executives and other guests deserving of quality accommodations.

**16. YWCA Building**, 28 Howell Ave.: This four-story, brick and wood frame building was commissioned by Phelps Dodge in 1916 to provide Bisbee women with a venue to nurture the town's fledgling civilized society.

**17. YMCA Building**, 39 Opera Ave.: This 1905 brick structure is a marriage of Italian Villa and Neoclassical Revival architectural styles whose decorative features have undergone many alterations.

**18. Allen Building**, 57a Subway: This is a unique two-part commercial building constructed in 1908 of gypsum block and stone (fig. 13.23).

**19. Main Street Commercial Buildings**, 1-67 Main St.: Along the Main Street/Tombstone Canyon Road corridor is a grouping of commercial buildings designed between 1902 and 1910 and reflecting Bisbee's early economic prosperity. They are primarily one- and two-part commercial buildings with a variety of nationally recognized stylistic elements including, in the case of those designed by Tucson/El Paso architect Henry Trost, reflections of the geometrical and naturalistic ornamental motifs of Louis Sullivan, Trost's architectural mentor.

**20. Copper Queen** (formerly Phelps Dodge) Library & Post Office Building, 6-8 Main St.: Designed in 1906 by Bisbee architect Fredrick Hurst, this three-story concrete and gypsum block building still houses the post office on the ground floor, a large reading room on the second floor, and the library on the third floor. Neoclassical and rusticated elements constitute the only form of stylistic references. The oddly scaled facade is defined by tall arches and porches on the upper floors.

**21. Phelps Dodge Mercantile Store**, 5 Copper Queen Plaza: This 1939 Streamline Moderne



*Fig. 13.23 – Allen Building, showing how a two-part commercial building type accommodates the topography of Bisbee's commercial district. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

building reflecting the stylistic trends of its day, replaced the previous company store on the site, which had been destroyed by fire. The interior has been severely altered, but some aspects of the original spatial and decorative quality still remain.

**22. The Brewery (Muheim Block), 13-17 Brewery Ave.:** Built in 1905, this two-story brick building housed numerous occupants including saloons, restaurants, a hotel, and the Bisbee Stock Exchange. The building, with its corner entrance, has Neoclassical Revival facade elements, as well as an interior with its original pressed metal ceiling and old stock boards.

**23. Pythian Castle, 29-33 OK St.:** Designed in 1904 as a fraternal lodge for the Knights of Pythias, the building boasts a highly decorated facade capped with a clock tower.

**24. Naco Road Buildings:** Extending southeast from Bisbee's commercial core is a series of buildings that housed a variety of civic functions. They include the 1910 Lyric Theatre, the 1902 former City Hall/Fire Station, a rusticated concrete building with a small belfry, and the 1910 former Sheriff's Office, a Neoclassical Revival building whose two-story facade is defined by four large columns.

#### ENDNOTES

1. Janet H. Strittmatter, "Arizona's Vernacular Dwellings," Master's Thesis (University of Arizona, 1998), chap. 9: 20.

2. *Ibid.*, chap. 9: 10.

3. Johns & Strittmatter Inc., "Historic Resources Inventory and Report of Tombstone, Arizona," Report for the Arizona State Historic Preservation Office, Arizona State Parks, (Phoenix, June 1996), chap. 2: 1.

4. Lynn R. Bailey, *"Too Tough to Die"—The Rise, Fall and Resurrection of a Silver Camp; 1878 to 1990* (Tucson: Westernlore Press, 2004), 330, 334.

5. Interview with James Garrison, State Historic Preservation Officer and co-author, together with Billy G. Garrett, of "Plan for the Creation of a Historic Environment in Tombstone, Arizona" (1972), a preservation plan (2004).

6. Bailey, *"Too Tough to Die,"* 88.

7. *Ibid.*, 112, 348.

8. Janet H. Parkhurst, "Ajo Townsite Historic District," National Register Nomination, produced by Old Pueblo Archaeology Center and Janet H. Strittmatter Inc. (October 2001), sec. 8: 8.

9. *Ibid.*, sec. 8: 15.

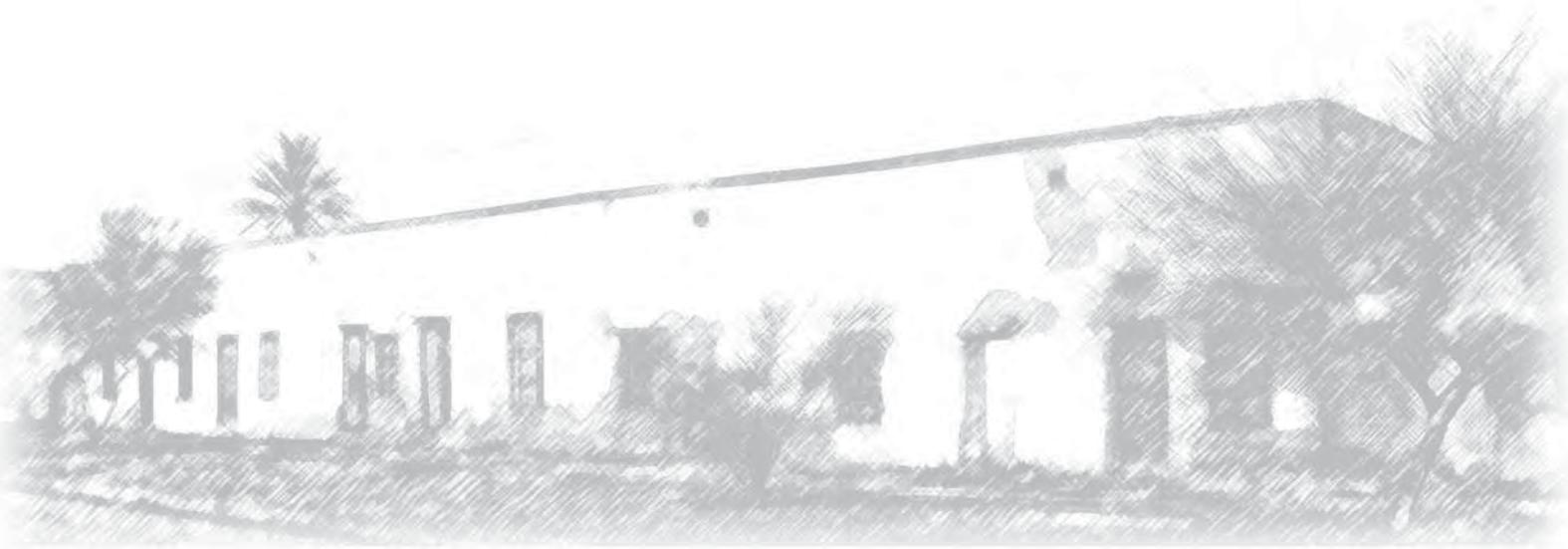
10. Woodward Architectural Group, "Warren: The City Beautiful," Historic Resources Inventory and Report (1993), 27.

11. Richard V. Francaviglia, Richard V., *Hard Places. Reading the Landscape of America's Historic Mining Districts* (Iowa City: University of Iowa Press, 1991), 22.

12. Richard Shelton, *Going Back to Bisbee* (Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1992), 164.

---

14



---

# DOWNTOWN TUCSON HISTORIC DISTRICTS

University of Arizona Preservation Studies Students  
coordinated by Andrew Gorski

## EL PRESIDIO

**T**he origins of the El Presidio district lie in the establishment of the Presidio San Agustín del Tucson in 1775 on the eastern edge of the Santa Cruz River floodplain (a topographical depression that can still be seen when looking west from Main Avenue), in order to complement the existing mission visita on the west side of the river floodplain. After the Mexican garrison left Tucson in 1856, the Presidio was occupied by soldiers of the United States but by 1862 it had been abandoned and left to the ravages of weather, neglect, and the pillaging of Tucsonans looking for building materials. The El Presidio neighborhood, as it is today, grew north along Main (formerly the Calle Real) and Granada Avenues, with most of the structures dating to between ca. 1860 and 1920. Part of the neighborhood was long referred to as “Snob Hollow,” due to the number of affluent Americans who built distinctive houses contrasting sharply with the Sonoran rowhouses of Meyer and Court Avenues. The neighborhood was officially designated as “El Presidio” on the National Register of Historic Places in 1976. The El Presidio neighborhood clearly reveals the urban and architectural transformation from Sonoran to American block and building typologies that took place at the turn of the 20th century. This contrast can best be seen at the junction of the Sonoran Stevens-Duffield House (site 18) and the American Corbett House (site 19). Although the Tucson Museum of Art building is a heavy presence in this residential-scaled neighborhood, the Museum has become an accomplished steward of some of the neighborhood’s oldest buildings comprising the Museum’s Historic Block.

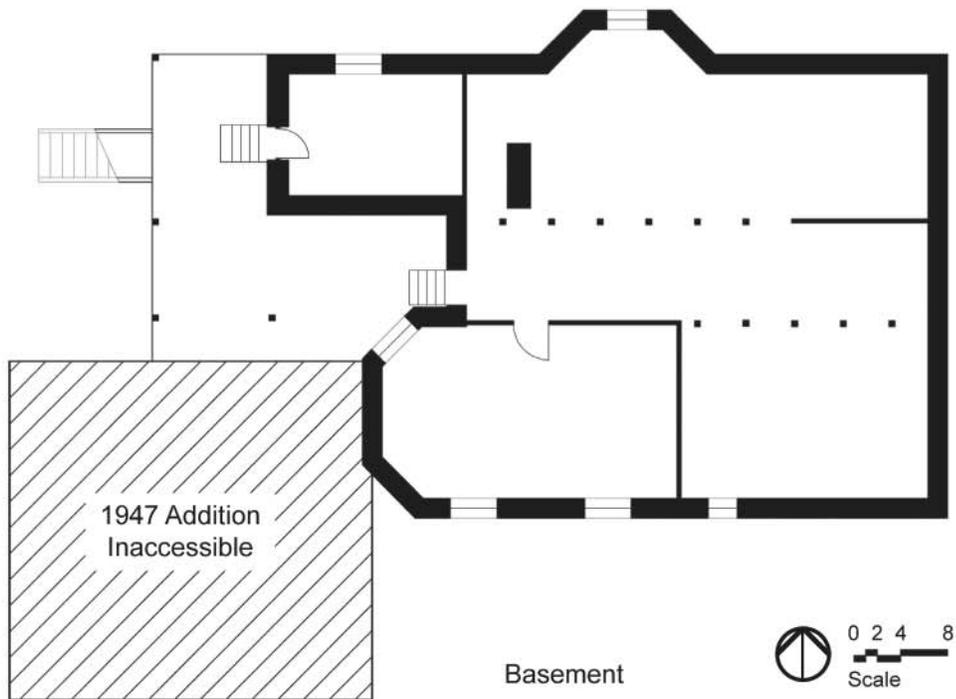
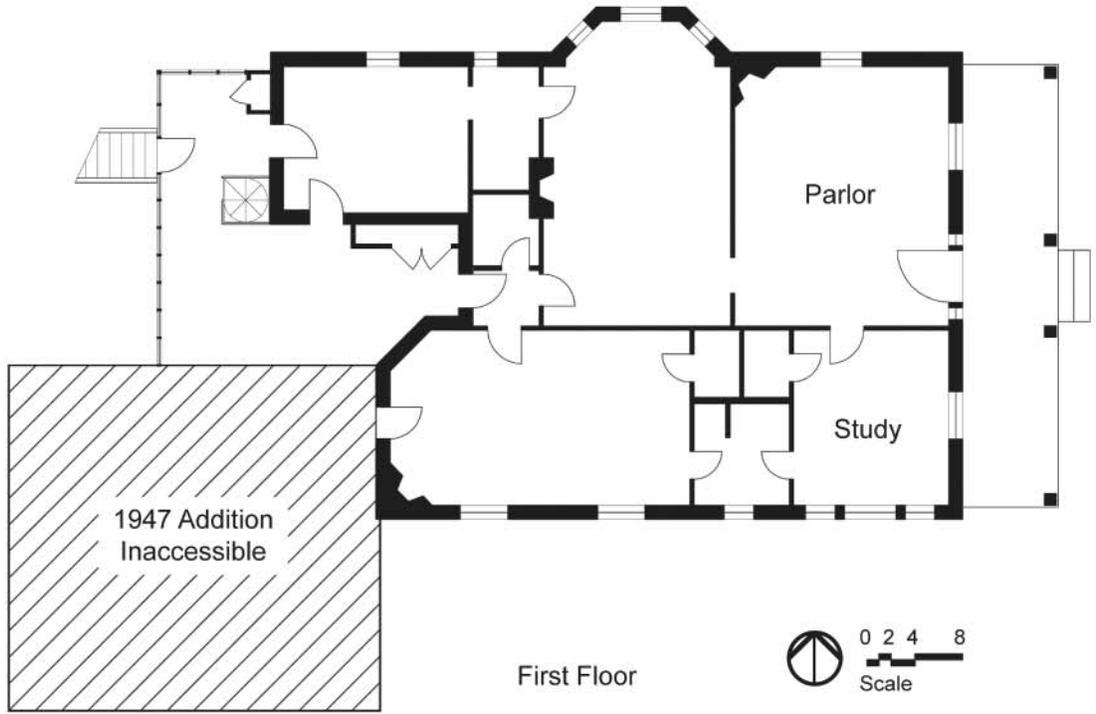
### 1. Franklin Residence, 402 N. Main Avenue

This American territorial house was built in 1898 by prominent Tucson lawyer Selim Franklin and his wife Henrietta Herring Franklin, who was responsible for the house's design. The house is distinguished by its placement far back from the street in contrast not only to the Sonoran rowhouse typology but even to some of its American contemporaries. The olive trees located throughout the property, as well as other specimens planted on the grounds of the University of Arizona campus, were imported in the early 1900s from the Mediterranean by Dr. Robert Forbes, an early University horticulturalist. The original house was fully carpeted and contained a parlor, dining room, two bedrooms, a study, one-and-a-half baths and a kitchen on the ground floor, with a coal chute and a nanny's quarters in the cellar. The original parlor had a cove ceiling, built in 1906, that was replaced by the fake beam ceiling seen today. The wood in this room was originally dark mahogany with a stem wall bookcase and an archway into the room from the foyer. The south wall of the study had a chimney in the center and two windows on each side. The house was originally designed with an attached front porch facing the street. Soon after construction, a rear sleeping porch was added; recently, it was expanded and enclosed. The southwest section of the house was added in 1947 by architect Art Brown. The house is built on a limestone foundation with plastered double brick walls and a ridge pyramidal wooden roof. Lumber brought in from Pasadena California is still visible in the beams and floor joists of the cellar.

*Fig. 14.1 – Exterior, Franklin House, looking southwest. Courtesy Andrew Gorski*

*Fig. 14.2 (far right) – Plans, Franklin House, Courtesy Preservation Studies, CALA, University of Arizona*





## 2. Second Owl's Club, 378 N. Main Avenue (exterior only)

Like the first Owl's Club (see Steinfeld Mansion), this 1902 two-story, stylistically eclectic building was designed by Henry Trost who mixed Mission Revival and Sullivanesque ornamentation. Trost incorporated playful references to several Tucson vernacular traditions: immense, oversized *canales*, typical of Sonoran row houses; a sculpted facade, reminiscent of that of San Xavier; and images of local flora and fauna. The building was renovated in 1985 and the façade completely reconstructed from historic photos by plaster sculptor Rob Boucher after vandalism had reduced the building to a ruin.

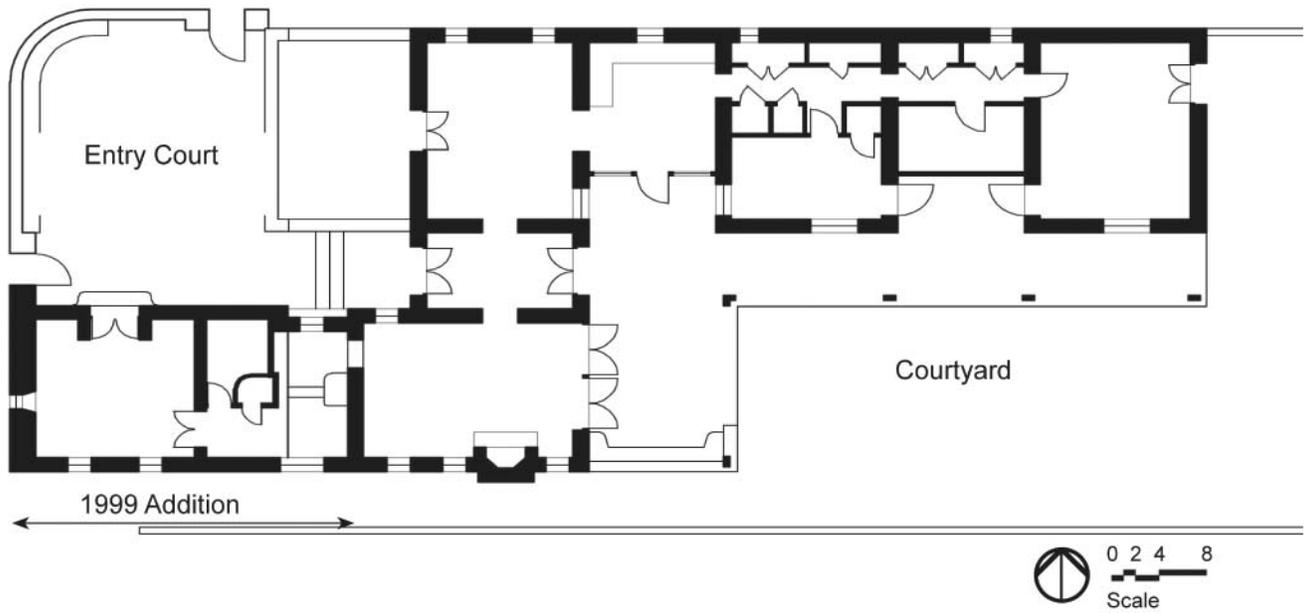


Fig. 14.5 – Exterior, Second Owl's Club.  
Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery

## 3. Wilder Residence, 350 N. Main Avenue

This contemporary house, designed in 1991 by Corky Poster, represents the application of traditional Sonoran building principles to new building: rooms are arranged around an outdoor courtyard and high ceilings and thick adobe wall construction appear throughout. The original house had an L-shaped plan with the courtyard facing southeast, the optimal orientation to enhance winter solar gain for passive heating. In 1999, Bob Vint designed an addition, creating a shady northern courtyard and porch for use during the hot summers. The system of courtyards enhances cross-ventilation and the evapo-

orative cooling system moves large volumes of air through the house. Both portions of the house have walls of exposed, stabilized adobe blocks with smooth gypsum plaster on the interiors. The floors are of exposed colored concrete, and the flat roof is constructed of recycled wood. The 1999 addition was designed around a pair of large glazed doors and wrought-iron *reja*, or grillwork, that became a prominent feature of the entry court. The addition has radiant floor heat with in-slab piping linked to a residential water heater.



*Fig. 14.4 – Plan, Wilder House.  
Courtesy Preservation Studies,  
CALA, University of Arizona*

*Fig. 14.5 – Exterior, Wilder  
House, looking east. Courtesy R.  
Brooks Jeffery*

**4. Verdugo Residence, 317-325 N. Main Avenue  
(exterior only)**

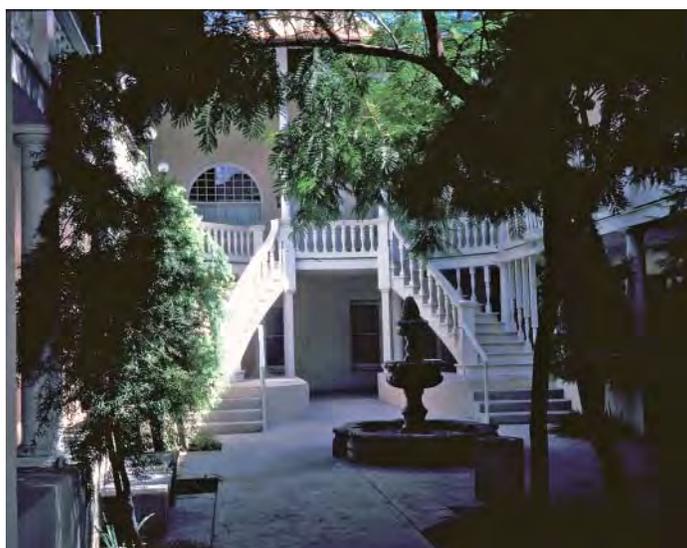
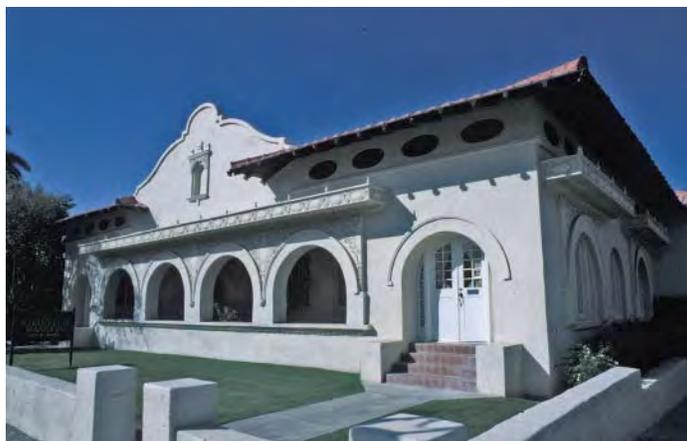
This 1877 house is an excellent example of the transformed Sonoran row house in which the original flat roof with *canales* was covered with a framed hipped roof, representing the arrival of the railroad and the availability of economical building materials. The Greek Revival trimwork also indicates the local influence of national design trends, again a consequence of Tucson's new rail connections. Noteworthy on this house is the American approach to its addition, which is placed directly behind the original house. If the house had remained true to its Sonoran typological roots, its growth would have taken place along the street line, ultimately creating an envelope around an interior courtyard.



*Fig. 14.6 – Exterior, Verdugo Residence. Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery*

**5. Steinfeld Mansion (Owl's Club), 300 N. Main Avenue  
(exterior and rear courtyard only)**

Designed in 1898 by Henry Trost as a residence for the thirteen bachelors who comprised the original fraternal Owl's Club, this two-story building reveals Trost's stylistic preference for combining Mission Revival forms with Sullivanesque detailing. The one-story public street facade contrasts sharply with the intimate space of the shaded rear courtyard, whose fountain and wall openings serve to cool the building using humidity and natural ventilation. Oval attic vents and deep overhangs also help to ventilate the attic space and keep the building cool, working not unlike the traditional O'odham ramada. The 1978 restoration by Gresham Larson Associates repaired much of the Sullivanesque ornamentation, among other treatments, and earned the architectural firm a design award.



*Fig. 14.7 – Exterior, Steinfeld Mansion.  
Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery*

*Fig. 14.8 – Rear courtyard, Steinfeld  
Mansion. Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery*

**6. El Presidio Bed & Breakfast (Kruttschnitt House), 297 N. Main Avenue (exterior only)**

Beneath the 1899 Victorian dress of this building is a traditional Sonoran row house, built sometime before 1886 with thick adobe walls, a flat roof, and a central *zaguán*. The transformation of roof form and the addition of porches and ornamentation illustrate the evolution of stylistic preferences by Tucsonans as a result of the arrival of the railroad, which exposed them to national trends in building design and aesthetics, as well as their desire to “Americanize” inherited Sonoran building types. A major restoration in 1980 by Paul Weiner brought this transformed Sonoran house to its present glory.



*Fig. 14.9 – Exterior, El Presidio Bed & Breakfast. Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery*

**7. Olcott Residence, 234 N. Main Avenue (exterior only)**

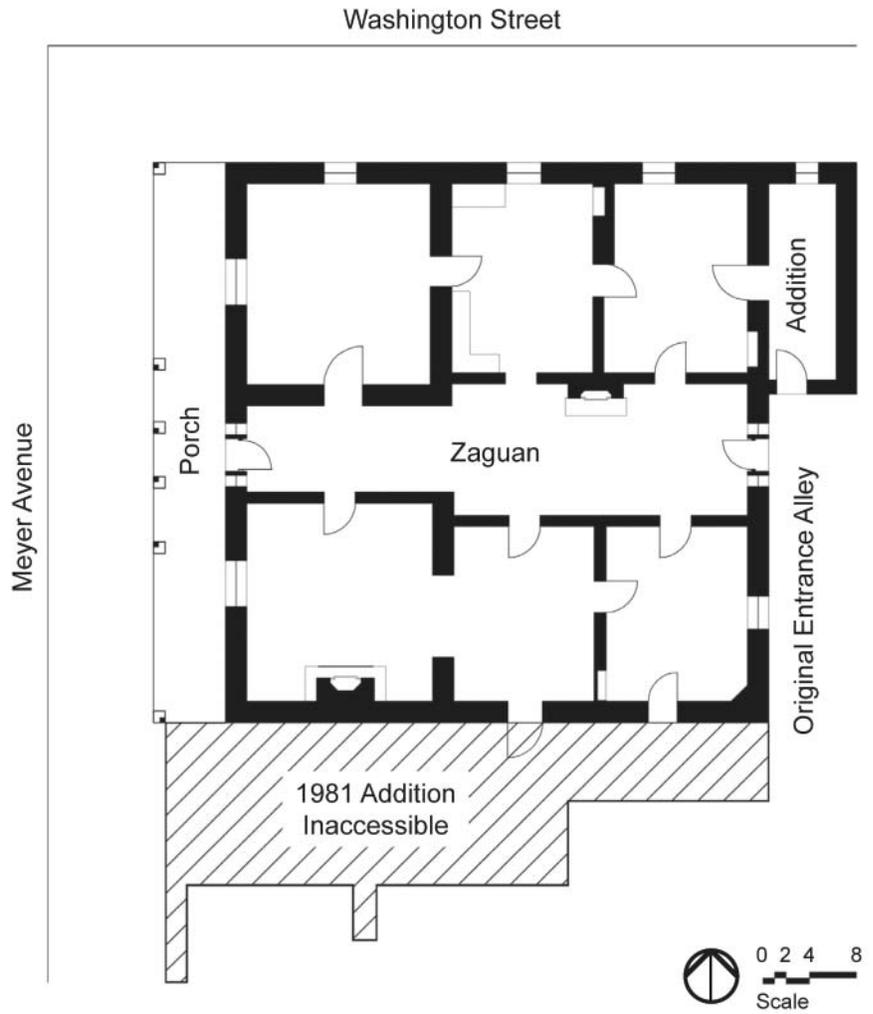
This detached house, built in 1890 by contractor Arthur Jacobson, is a compact four-square house with an L-shaped corner porch carved out under a pyramidal roof. It was the first house on the west side of Main Avenue to take advantage of the steep slope toward the Santa Cruz River floodplain, making possible two stories on the west side (rear) of the house. Unlike its Sonoran counterparts made of adobe, this house is constructed of exposed clay brick, expressing its adherence to American material preferences.



*Fig. 14.10 – Exterior, Olcott House. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

### **8. Valdez Residence, 234 N. Meyer Avenue**

This transformed Sonoran rowhouse, built in ca. 1880, is symmetrical in plan with a central *zaguán* that runs the depth of the building and from which all of the residence's rooms were accessed. As was typical of the Sonoran plan, there were two access points to the original house, one facing the street and the other, in the rear, facing what was originally the interior of the block but is now an alley. At an unknown date, the original flat roof was capped with a wood frame pyramidal roof and a front porch was added to the west facade with a dropped, hipped roof, chamfered posts, and scrollwork brackets. Francisco Valdez, grandfather of current owner Tony Valdez, purchased the house in 1921. At that time, the kitchen was located in the southeast corner of the house with a wood-burning stove. A porch on the south side of the house burned down around 1940 and was replaced in 1981 by an enclosed addition. In 1950 electrical work was done throughout the house. In 1960, with funding from a City of Tucson grant, numerous repairs were carried out, including replacement of the pyramidal roof materials with plywood and shingles. The current owners believe the original floor may have been dirt; there is now a 3' crawl space under the wood floor. Some of the windows punctuating the north and east facades may once have been doors. The Queens Wreath vine that currently grows on the porch trellis is a common ornamental plant frequently used in early Tucson landscapes.



*Fig. 14.11 – Plan, Valdez Residence. Courtesy of Preservation Studios, CALA, University of Arizona*

*Fig. 14.12 – Exterior, Valdez Residence, looking southeast. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*



### 9. North Meyer Avenue rowhouses (exterior only)

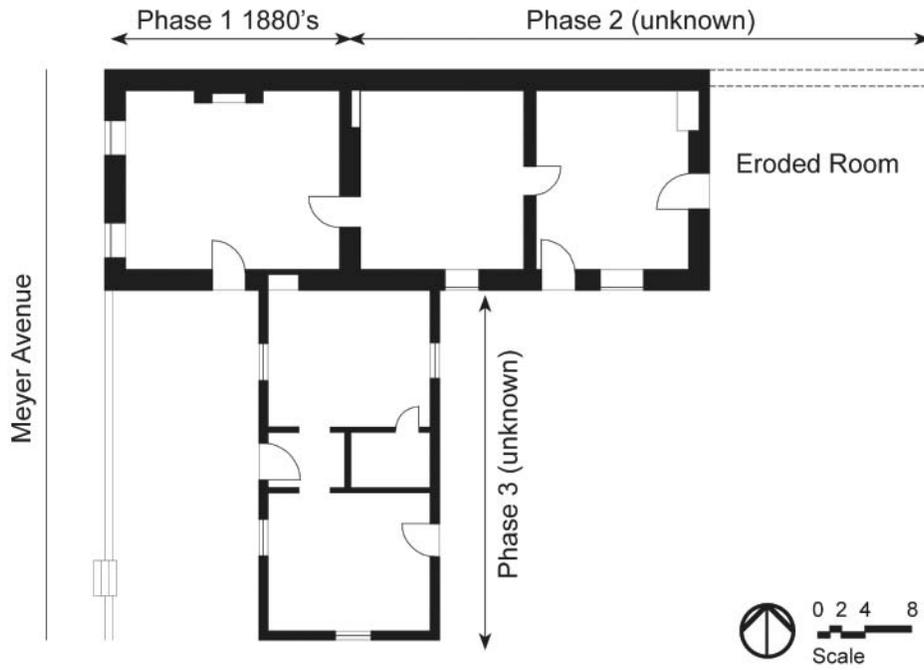
These transformed Sonoran rowhouses, built between 1860 and 1880, create an almost continuous street facade as a reminder of the original Sonoran urban block typology. Originally, each building had a flat roof but those roofs have since been replaced by gable roof forms of various pitches, heights, and materials.



*Fig. 14.15 – Exterior, North Meyer Avenue rowhouses. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

### 10. Residence, 378 N. Meyer Avenue

Although the chronological details are unclear, it is known that this one-and-a-half story, L-shaped, gable-roofed house was built in three stages. The first stage, dating to the 1880's and closest to the street, consists of a large main room with 21" thick adobe block walls, *viga*-and-plank roof, and a wooden floor of 1" slats. The second stage added three rooms (one now almost completely eroded away) to the east of the main room. Their walls were constructed of 12" adobe blocks with a wooden ceiling of beaded slats and 3" wood slat flooring. The third and final stage included an attached guesthouse to the south of the main building with 9" thick adobe exterior walls, wood frame interior walls, and a lath-and-plaster ceiling. The framed roof structure of the third stage can be seen from inside the rooms. The second level is not accessible, as it is not structurally stable.



*Fig. 14.14 – Plan, 578 North Meyer Avenue. Courtesy of Preservation Studies, CALA, University of Arizona*

*Fig. 14.15– Exterior, 578 North Meyer Avenue, looking northeast. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*



*Fig. 14.16 – Plan, Carrillo/Sloan Residence. Courtesy of Preservation Studies, CALA, University of Arizona*

*Fig. 14.17 – Exterior, Carrillo/Sloan Residence, looking northeast. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

### 11. Carrillo/Sloan Residence, 382 N. Meyer Avenue

This house was built around 1880 by Leopoldo Carrillo, son of one of Tucson's prominent early entrepreneurs of the same name. The elder Carrillo developed Carrillo Gardens, later known as the Elysian Grove, an early recreation destination with a lake, stage, and beer garden located directly east of the present-day Barrio Viejo. The house represents the transitional period of architectural expression with Sonoran characteristics—building placement on the front property line, 24" thick adobe block walls, flat roofs, and high interior spaces—combined with American characteristics such as building additions set back from the front property line and to the rear of the property as well as an attached front porch. Recent repairs to the exterior walls revealed that the house had been built in four stages, probably expanding as the family grew. The present living room may correspond to the original 1880 house, with the dressing room and bedroom added shortly thereafter, as well as a covered outdoor kitchen. Later additions to the east included a dining room and indoor kitchen. The skylight in the dining room gives a sense of the height of the original ceilings and the exposed *vigas*. In the early 1900s, the brick foyer, bedroom, and interior bathroom were added. The Sloan family has owned the property since 1977 during which

time they have lived in a constant state of restoration and discovery. Excavation of an old well in the backyard unearthed champagne bottles, oyster shells, caper bottles, Chinese pottery, an ink well, fragments of clay water jugs, a porcelain doll's head and arm, a penny whistle and marbles, evidence of an earlier family with a boy and girl. The backyard garden is one of the many eclectic gardens of El Presidio.

### 12. Infill Construction, 418-426 (north side) and 421-425 (south side) N. Meyer-Court Avenue (exterior only)

Constructed by City of Tucson architect Joe Comello in 2004, this demonstration infill project involved the looping together of Meyer and Court Avenues, creating a edge wall of stabilized adobe against busy Sixth Street and providing an opportunity to create new architecture respectful of El Presidio's vernacular expressions. The two rectangular buildings incorporate formal and detail elements from the existing neighborhoods. The south building is one story tall toward the existing neighborhood and the north building has a tall one-story facade facing Meyer Avenue and a two-story facade facing away from the neighborhood, creating a salt-box roof form.



*Fig. 14.18 – Exterior, 418-426 N. Meyer-Court Avenue. Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery*

### 13. Burns & Wald-Hopkins Office, 261 N. Court Avenue

The original building on this site was erected prior to 1883 and typified Sonoran rowhouse architecture from the late 19th century. The one-story building was sited directly adjacent to the street on the east and south sides, framing a courtyard on the inside of the block. The chamfered corner and entrance identifies the corner unit's commercial function; the other units were primarily residential. The original units were one room deep in an *enfilade* series of connected adobe rooms. The adobe block walls are 21" thick with a flat roof composed of wooden beams forming 14-15' high interior volumes, topped with saguaro ribs and packed earth above. At some unknown date, a lightweight wood frame hipped roof covered the L-shaped building, transforming it by the application of American building technologies and using available lumber shipped in by train. In 2000, the current occupant, an architectural firm, began restoration of the then vacant building, including removal of shed structures that had been attached to the original L-shaped building and replacement of them with a large, contemporary, open studio addition. All construction features that were not original to the L-shaped structure were removed: roof and floor structures, partition walls, windows and doors, and wall finishes. All flooring was removed and replaced by concrete and brick paving. All wood lintels and nailers were left exposed and the original saguaro ribs and mud on the roof beams were left exposed on the interior.



*Fig. 14.19 – Exterior, Burns & Wald-Hopkins Office, looking northwest. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

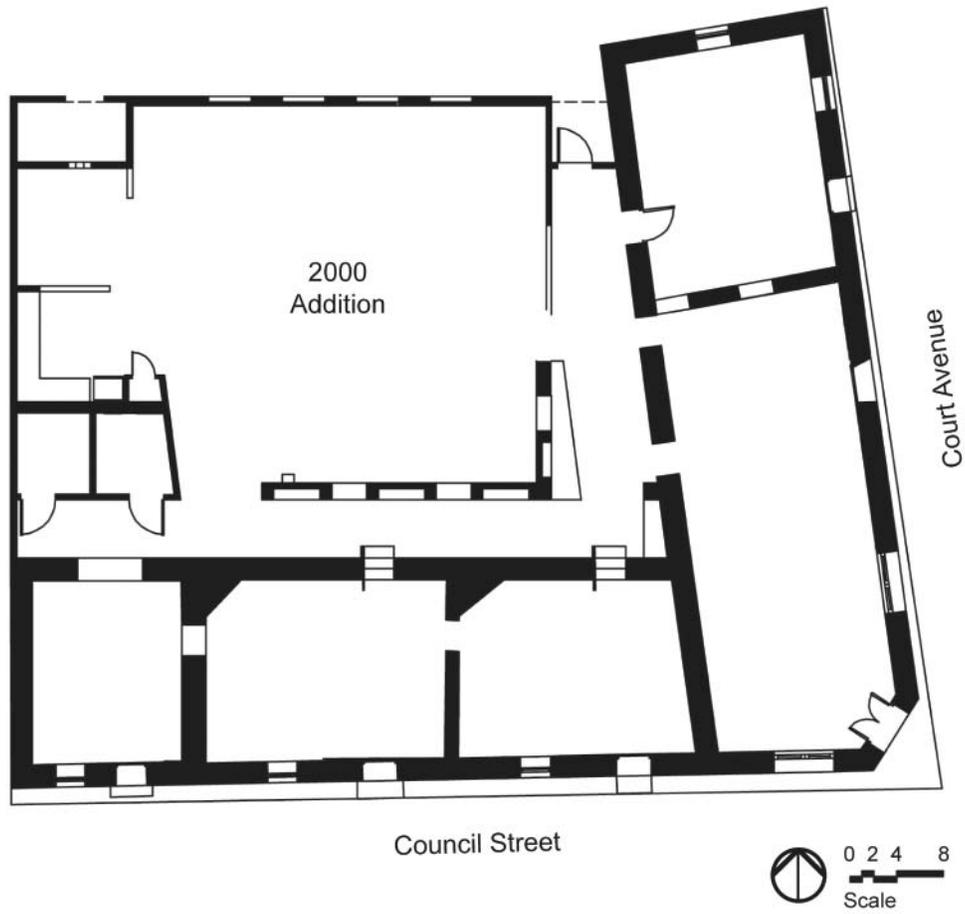


Fig. 14.20 – Plan, Burns & Wald-Hopkins Office. Courtesy of Burns & Wald-Hopkins



*Fig. 14.21 – A 1954 aerial photograph of downtown Tucson marked with the approximate location of the Tucson presidio wall. The upper right-hand corner is the northeast corner tower site. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology, Inc.*



*Fig. 14.22 – The adobe foundations of the northeast tower of the Tucson Presidio (c 1782-1856) lie over a Hobokam pit structure (c 900). Courtesy of Desert Archaeology, Inc.*

#### 14. Northeast Corner Presidio Wall, West Washington Street near Church Street

Excavations on the northeast corner of the Tucson Presidio (fig. 14.21) in 2002-2003 uncovered the adobe block foundations of the northeast tower and the eastern exterior wall (fig. 14.22) which aligned with previously discovered segments in the Pima County Courthouse courtyard. The square corner tower was originally 50'-long on each side and stood 20' high while the outer wall was originally 22' wide and stood 10-12' tall. Soldiers stood on a wooden walkway inside the 20'-tall tower and could fire their muskets down the length of the wall. Excavations inside the corner of the fort revealed postholes from a Hohokam ramada and numerous trash-filled pits that yielded Native American and Mexican pottery (fig. 14-23), animal bones, and plant remains allowing archaeologists to conjecture as to what domestic life was like in the presidio (fig. 14.24). The City of Tucson plans to recreate the corner tower and adjacent walls, offset from their original location. A glass enclosure will display a section of the tower wall and an underlying Hohokam pit structure. The adjacent City-owned Residence at 190-196 N. Court Avenue (Site 15) will house displays and artifacts found at the site.



*Fig. 14.25 – Mexican majolica sherds from the Tucson Presidio, dating to c 1775-1850s. Courtesy of Desert Archaeology, Inc.*

*Fig. 14.24 – A reconstruction of a Presidio dwelling interior based on recent archaeological findings. Drawing by Robert Ciaccio, courtesy of Desert Archaeology, Inc.*

### **15. Residence, 190-196 N. Court Avenue**

Originally constructed in the 1860s and occupied by a typical Mexican-American family, this adobe house is characteristic of the Sonoran rowhouse type. Its facade was built flush against the edge of Court Avenue with a large courtyard located in the rear of the house where wells and privies were located and cooking, washing, and other activities took place. Constructed of thick, plastered adobe walls, the house began as a single row of three rooms, each with a door flanked by a pair of windows opening onto Court Avenue. Doors were present in corresponding positions on the opposite side of the house, opening onto the rear courtyard, where a second row of rooms was later added. Although later modified into a hipped roof with corrugated metal, the original roof of the house was had flat, constructed of *vigas* and saguaro ribs and then covered with packed earth. Located near the northeast corner of Tucson's historic Presidio fortress, this house was purchased by the City of Tucson and has recently been restored for adaptive use as part of the Presidio wall park showcasing Tucson's Spanish and Mexican origins.

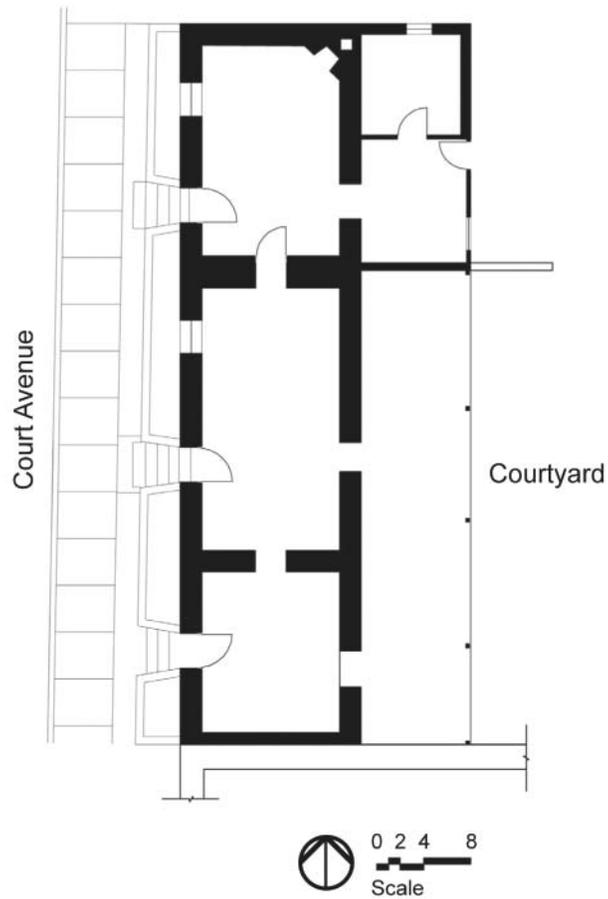


Fig. 14.25 – Exterior, Residence, 190-196 N. Court Avenue, looking southeast. Courtesy of Preservation Studies, CALA, University of Arizona

Fig. 14.26 – Plan, Residence, 190-196 N. Court Avenue. Courtesy of Preservation Studies, CALA, University of Arizona

### 16. Old Town Artisans (Telles Block), 201 N. Meyer Avenue

This complex of buildings exemplifies the evolution of one of the oldest buildings in Tucson. It began as a series of Sonoran row-house cells (evident as early as the 1862 Fergusson Map) growing incrementally along Telles Street, then by 1883 turning the corner onto Meyer Avenue, thus forming an “L”. By 1919, the building was transformed by the addition of a pitched roof over the original flat roof and by 1957 with the addition of a row of rooms on the interior of the courtyard that is still present today. With the exception of a few contemporary wood frame interior partitions, the entire complex is constructed of adobe block walls supporting a series of flat roofs made of a variety of available materials, including *vigas*, dimensioned lumber, saguaro ribs, and wood from barrels and packing crates. The height of the original structure was lower than it is today. If you look carefully on the interior, you can see the line between the original and later wall heights, as well as a variety of wall finishes including exposed adobe, plaster, and even applied wallpaper. The grade changes by several feet throughout the building, with steps and ramps from room to room. In the 1890s the City of Tucson graded all the streets surrounding the oldest part of Tucson, moving the finished grade down by a few feet. There are steps from the exterior sidewalk into the structure in order to accommodate the drop in elevation. Sometime in the 20th century, a basement was dug out under one of the southern rooms of the complex, perhaps as a store for alcohol during Prohibition (not an uncommon practice in Tucson). The interior courtyard, made lush by trees and other plantings, is one of the most pleasant outdoor spaces in Tucson, providing an example of how intimate courtyard spaces can offer a climactic and psychological respite in hot climates.



*Fig. 14.27 – Exterior, Old Town Artisans (Telles Block), looking northeast. Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery*

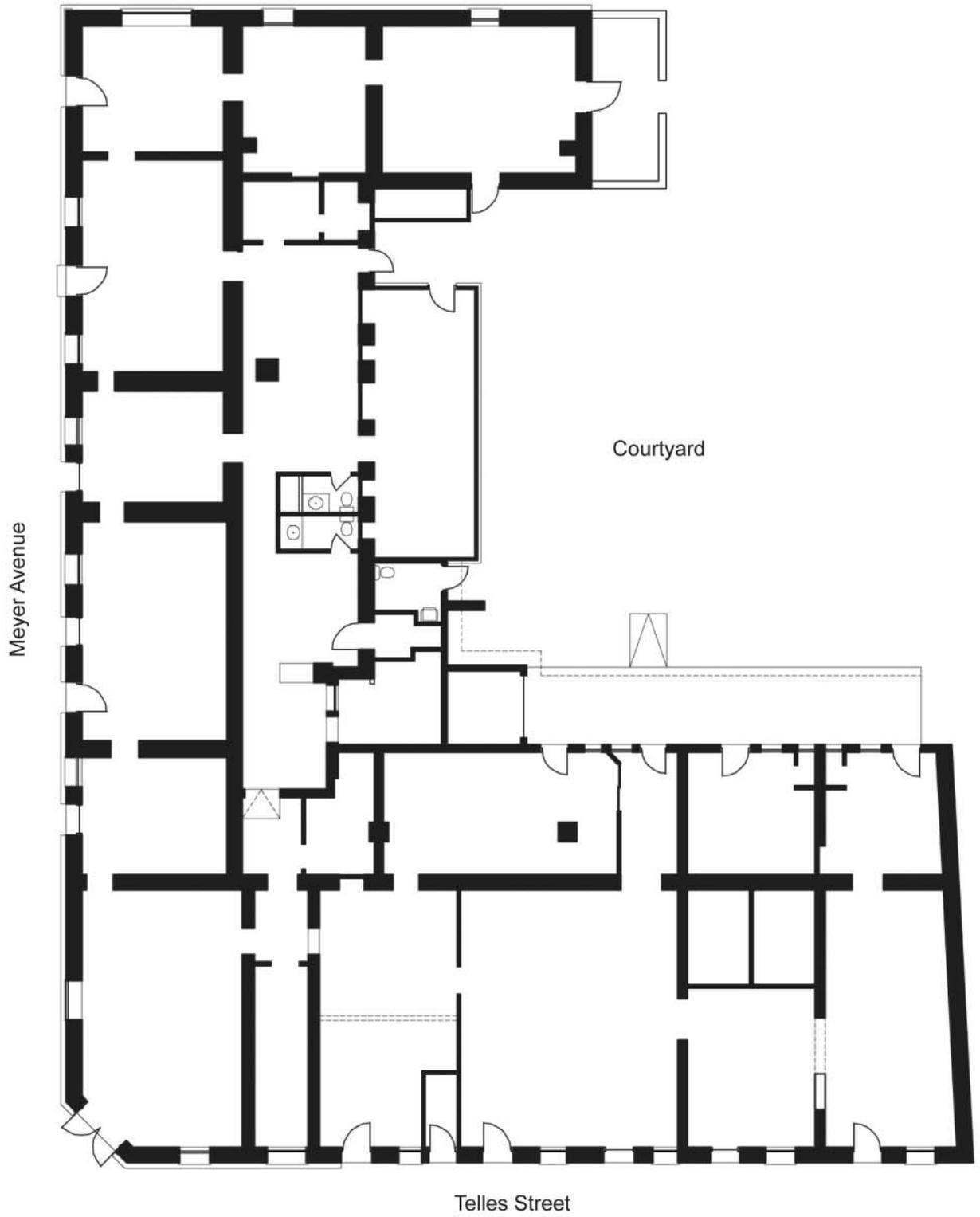
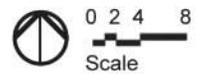


Fig. 14.28 – Plan, Old Town Artisans (Telles Block). Courtesy of Preservation Studies, CALA, University of Arizona



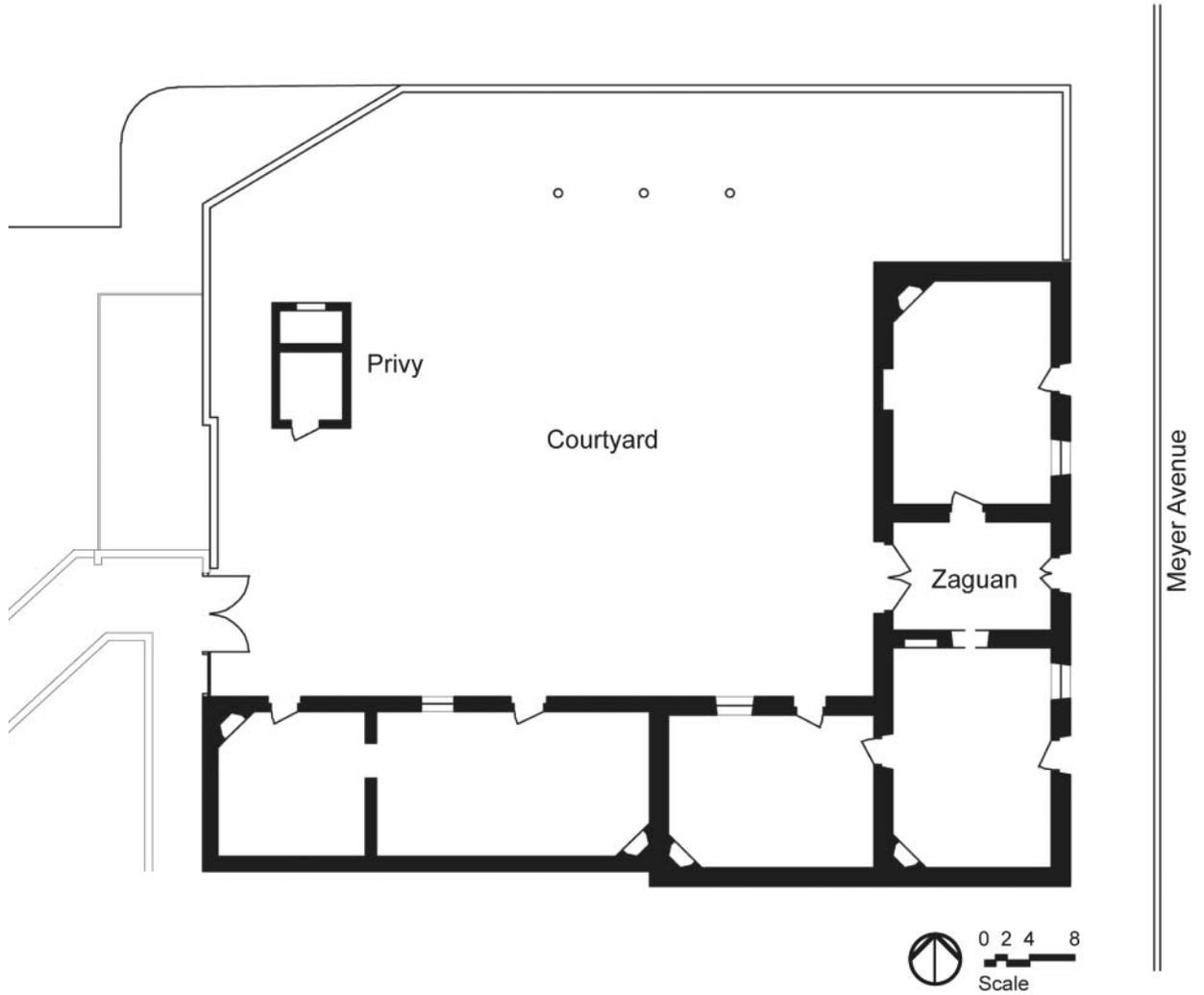
**17. Casa Cordova, 171-177 N. Meyer Avenue  
(open during Saturday night banquet)**

Casa Cordova is the oldest intact structure in the El Presidio neighborhood, with the southern portions dating to before 1848. This building is an example of the early Sonoran row-house typical of the barrios that extended from this site south along Meyer Avenue to the present-day Barrio Viejo. Although this building has lost its adjacent structures, it would originally have shared a continuous facade abutting the street. A *zaguán* connects the street to a courtyard at the interior of the block, defined by the L-shaped plan of five rooms and featuring a well, adobe oven, ramada, and privy. The adobe block walls are 24" thick and support a roof structure made of pine and mesquite *vigas*, saguaro rib *latillas*, and topped by a 12" layer of packed earth. A cloth *manta* was typically attached beneath the 11'-high ceilings to catch dirt that worked its way through from the roof. (A replica manta is presently installed in one of the rooms.) Rainwater drained off the roof through metal spouts (*canales*) that extend far beyond the vertical wall surface in order to avoid splash erosion on the exposed adobe wall. The floors were originally dirt and were dampened frequently and pounded to make them smooth and hard. Corner fireplaces were common and present in many of the rooms. Due to the scarcity of wood for long-span lintels, windows were kept to a minimum and were originally barred with saguaro ribs or mesquite and covered with rawhide, as window glass was not available in Tucson until the 1860s. The structure was modified in the late 19th and early 20th centuries by the addition of a wood frame roof laid over the original roof which has since been removed. Also at that time, the exterior was plastered with lime to protect the adobe from erosion and infiltration of water. Another erosion protection treatment was the placement of fired clay brick coping on the top of the parapet walls and the placement of a wainscot of ashlar on the street facade to prevent rainwater cascading from the *canales* from eroding the base of the exterior wall. In 1973 Casa Cordova was restored by E.D. Herreras as a museum house to represent an 1870s Tucson adobe house. In 1996, the adobe walls were stabilized by Bob Vint, architect, and Eric Means, contractor. Today, the building is under the stewardship of the Tucson Museum of Art.

*Fig. 14.29 – Casa Cordova looking west.  
Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery*

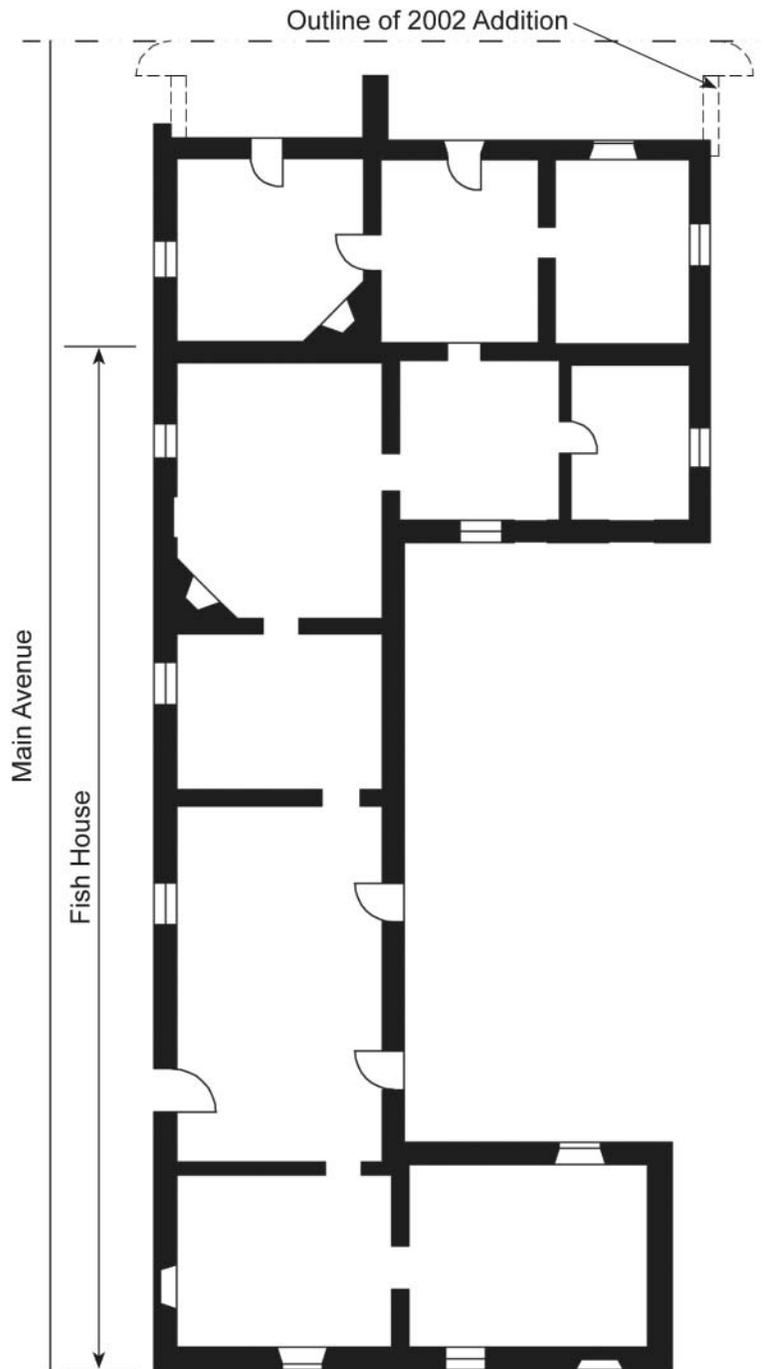


*Fig. 14.50 – Plan, Casa Cordova. Courtesy Preservation Studies,  
CALA, University of Arizona*



**18. Fish-Stevens-Duffield House,  
119-163 N. Main Avenue (open  
during Saturday night banquet)**

This massive adobe structure (220' long and 20' high) comprises three separate family homes that are conjoined. Although not proven by archaeological evidence, the alignment of the street facade appears to coincide with that of the original presidio wall, suggesting that the exterior wall utilized remnants of the presidio wall a decade after the Mexican troops had left the garrison. The northern portion of this structure (Stevens-Duffield) was built in 1865, followed by the southern portion (Fish) in 1868. Although all the original property owners were Americans, they followed local customs by building in the Sonoran tradition, evident in the building's placement close to the street (or taking advantage of the existing remnants of the former presidio wall), 24"-thick adobe block walls, and high ceilings of saguaro cactus ribs on mesquite wood beams topped by packed earth. A later addition to the Fish House created a wide "U," forming a courtyard on the east side of the building. The ceilings in the Fish House include packing crates from Edward Fish's store. The central section between the Fish and Stevens-Duffield houses was enclosed in 2002 by Tucson architect Jim Gresham, forming a new entrance to the Tucson Museum of Art. Historic and contemporary forms are made complementary by the use of similar scale, proportion, and wall texture but are also distinguished by the non-alignment of the exterior walls, materials, and details.

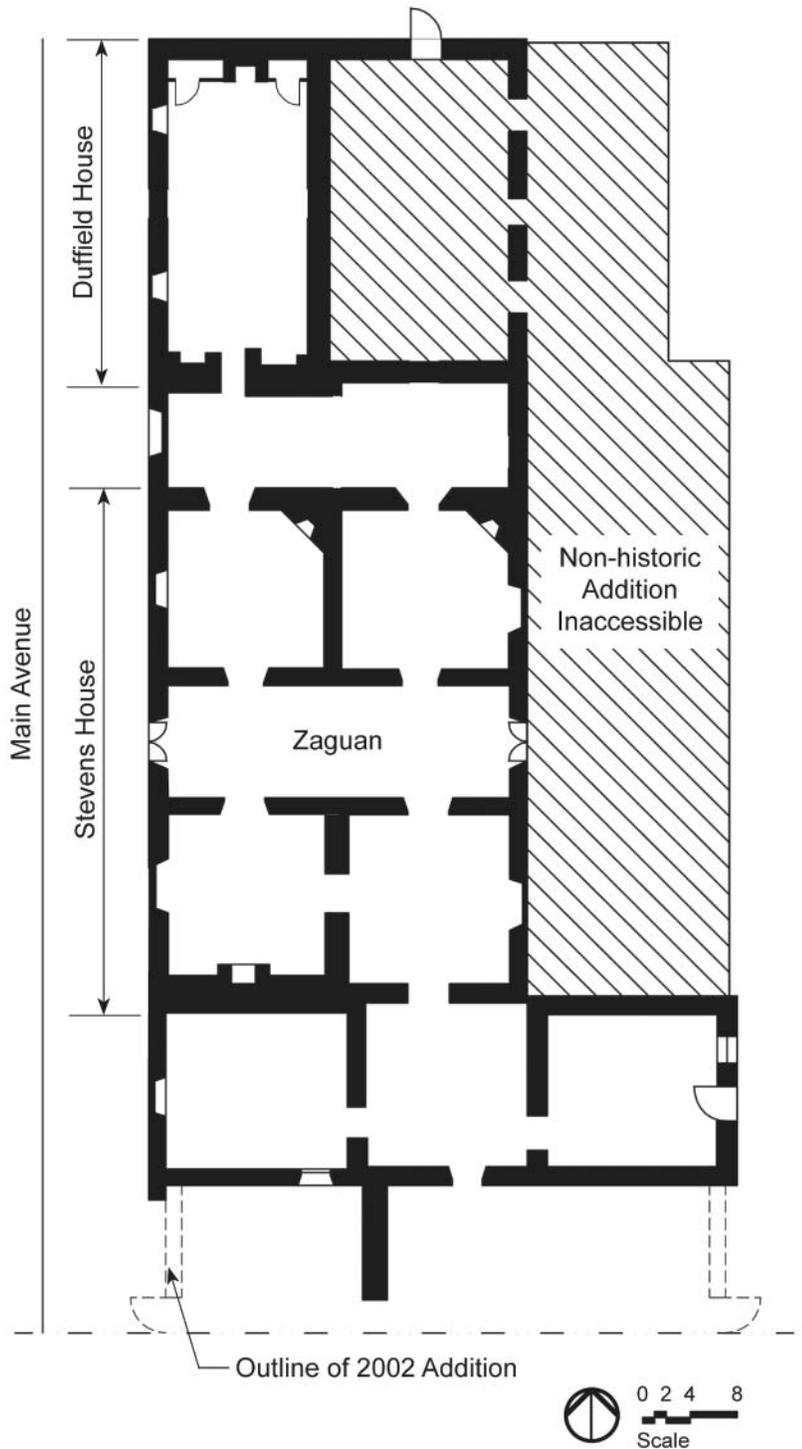




*Fig. 14.51 (opposite)  
– Plan, Fish House.  
Courtesy Preservation  
Studies, CALA, University  
of Arizona*

*Fig. 14.52 – Exterior, Fish  
House, looking northeast.  
Courtesy Preservation  
Studies, CALA, University  
of Arizona*

*Fig. 14.53 – Plan,  
Stevens-Duffield House.  
Courtesy Preservation  
Studies, CALA, University  
of Arizona*



### 19. Corbett House, 179 N. Main Avenue (open during Saturday night banquet)

Built in 1906-1907 by J. Knox Corbett, owner of a local lumber supply company, Corbett House is an early 20th-century clay brick and timber structure designed and built in the Mission Revival style by the architectural firm Holmes & Holmes. This is one of the first professionally designed houses in Tucson, sitting back from the street with a wide arched front porch, capped by a gently sloping hipped roof and flanked by matching hipped roofs of clay tile. The extensive wall openings under the eaves were designed to ventilate the attic space and keep the house cool. A wood frame screened porch separated the house from the rear patio, but was later removed when exposed brick columns were erected to support the porch roofs. There are a total of fourteen rooms in the U-shaped house, and the major ones were paneled in ash. The house was provided with leaded panes for windows and French doors, lending a light and decorative quality to the building, characteristic of the Craftsman era. Sliding pocket doors, typical of that era as well, opened the living room to the dining room, and the latter to the outdoor courtyard. Common to the emerging American house types in Tucson was the addition of a light frame, screened sleeping porch, in lieu of the Sonoran rowhouse tradition of sleeping in the courtyard during the hot summer months when the body of the house was too hot. These sleeping porches were either integrated within the roof form, as is the case here, or form a shed-roofed extension to the rear of the house. The house has a full basement, with a water-cooled, forced air heat exchanger (one of Tucson's first residential air conditioning systems, installed in ca. 1945) and the original coal-fired gravity flow furnace, which was later converted to use with oil and then gas.

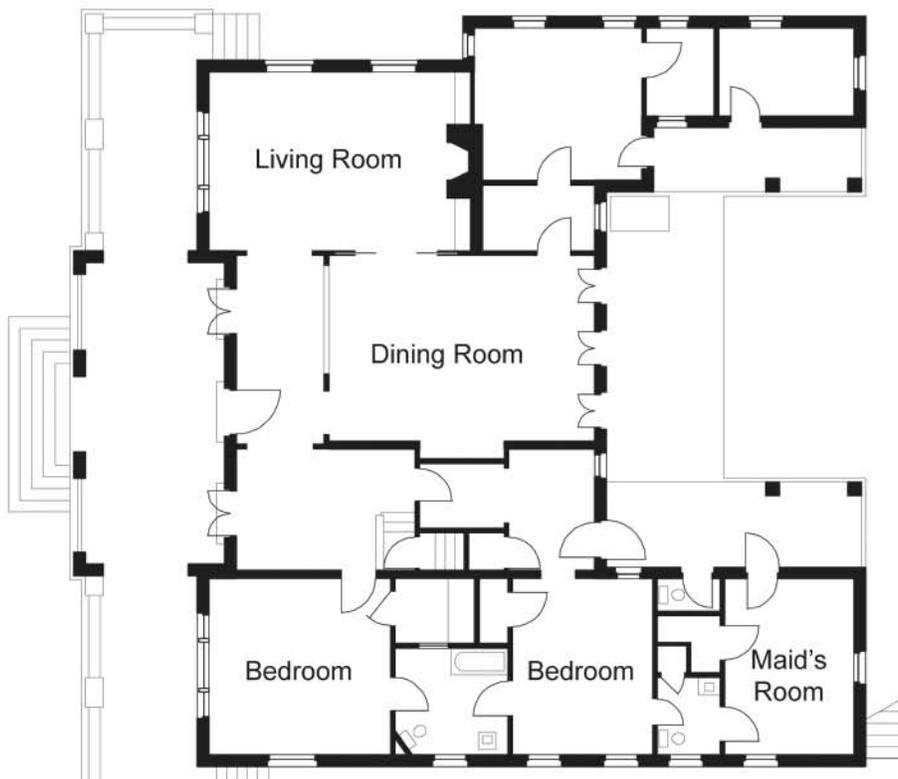


*Fig. 14.54 – Exterior, Corbett House, looking east. Courtesy Preservation Studies, CALA, University of Arizona*

*Fig. 14.55 – Plans, Corbett House. Courtesy Preservation Studies, CALA, University of Arizona*



Second Floor



### Desert Flora

The Sonora Desert is home to some of the world's most majestic and intriguing flora. The arid conditions of the region have forced plants to adopt unique methods of sustenance and defense. The most recognized example is, of course, the saguaro cactus. The saguaro is a very patient plant, growing only about an inch a year. This slow growth allows it to stay stalwart as it eventually reaches up to fifty feet in height, making it the most distinctive of desert plants. One way to gauge the age of a saguaro is by counting its arms: if the large succulent has more five arms, it is estimated to be at least two hundred years old. Throughout the cool nights of May and June, the buds arranged at the ends of the saguaro's arms blossom into the Arizona state flower. The saguaro also produces a fruit in the fall that was once an important food source for the indigenous peoples of the region and that continues to be served as special treat to this day.



If the saguaro is the visible symbol of the Sonora Desert, then the creosote bush is its olfactory representative. After a thundercloud cleansed the desert, a wonderful, unmistakable scent suffuses the atmosphere: the scent of a freshly rain-washed creosote bush. The creosote is an evergreen shrub contending for survival with countless other species of vegetation. Its small, pointed leaves have evolved in such a way as to conserve water and dissipate heat. The sweet, pungent odor of the bush is activated when water mixes with the oil in its leaves. The creosote is a tough, hardscrabble bush that nonetheless provides the desert with one of its most captivating sensory experiences.

Creosote may be the most sensual of desert shrubs, but the mesquite is the most populous and possibly the most popular. The useful mesquite has been a source of food, food flavoring, and firewood from time immemorial. For natives of the Southwest, the mesquite pod was a nutritional staple from which tea, syrup, and a ground meal called pinole was made. The bark of the mesquite was utilized in basketry and medicinal remedies. Mesquite continues to be useful to this day; in particular, with its smokeless, slow-burning wood, mesquite is favored as a savory charcoal for barbecuing.

Another visually distinctive desert plant is the palo verde tree. Its green bark and branches easily identify it. In fact, palo verde means green wood (or stick) in Spanish. There are two main species of the tree in the Southwest; the blue palo verde requires a good amount of water to survive and so can be found primarily along side arroyos and washes, whereas the foothill palo verde has a wider habitat. The foothill variety also grows more slowly and lives longer (sometimes up to 400 years). Both trees can photosynthesize sunlight through their bark, a useful trait when they drop their leaves during the warm seasons or full branches to combat drought. In its flowering season, the palo verde adds a vibrant splash of color to the desert as multitudes of yellow flowers blossom on its branches.

Source: <http://www.desertusa.com/>

## BARRIO VIEJO

The Barrio Viejo is composed of a number of other smaller barrios, each with its distinctive cultural and architectural identity. The majority of the Barrio Viejo was built between the 1860s and the 1920s and it is a survivor of the 1967 urban renewal demolition that erased the Sonoran rowhouse neighborhoods north of Cushing Street and on the current site of the Tucson Community Center. In the last decade of the 19th century, the core neighborhood was called Barrio Libre because it was a “free district” outside the city’s jurisdiction. Many of the Mexican residents were families of ranchers living in homes in town to be near church, community, and schools. Among the residents were business people and professionals, but they were mostly laborers, bakers, blacksmiths, saloon-keepers, and shopkeepers. After the completion of the railroad, Chinese immigrants moved into the neighborhood and opened restaurants, laundries, and markets. It is still an area of Hispanic cultural and architectural traditions according to which the street becomes a social space that is clearly defined by a continuous wall formed by contiguous adobe houses at the front property line. This early form, in which residences lined the block perimeter and commercial functions were sited at the corners of the block, was then transformed by the arrival of non-Hispanic Americans. While the majority of early buildings are of the Sonoran rowhouse type, later American houses illustrate adoption of national stylistic trends and the creation of Territorial-period hybrids.

### 20. El Tiradito, 221 S. Main Avenue

*El Tiradito*, Spanish for “the little castaway,” refers to the site of a murdered man; it became a place for Mexican-Americans to say a prayer for the man’s soul and to make a wish (it is also called the “wishing shrine”).



Fig. 14.56 – *El Tiradito*, looking west. Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery

The actual location of the incident, and the first shrine, is in the middle of present-day Simpson Street, just west of S. Meyer Avenue. The current location, designated in 1894, is very near the artesian spring called “El Ojito” on the road to the original Mission San Agustín. This new site was deeded to the city in 1927 and it was in that year that the Tucson City Council chose to make one version of the many legends associated with the shrine official. The U-shaped adobe wall that serves as a backdrop to the shrine was designed in 1940 by E.D. Herreras and constructed by the National Youth Administration.

### **21. Hardy Residence, 585 S. Main Avenue**

This contemporary house, designed in 1997 by Vint & Associates and executed by Michael Keith, general contractor, and Eric Means, adobe mason, was one of the first infill construction projects in the southern part of Barrio Viejo. Its scale, proportions, massing, and materials are designed to fit within the surrounding streetscape as an expression of the Sonoran architectural tradition. The house is placed close to the street, and extends to the side lot lines. The interior rooms are gathered around a courtyard serving as private outdoor space at the center of the house and providing cooling to the house by evaporation. The courtyard is surrounded by a corredor, a tall covered porch, providing shade in the summer but high enough to permit winter sun to enter the interior for passive heating. A central breezeway, or *zaguán*, connects the corredor and courtyard with the street-front entrance. The adobe construction, the other component of Sonoran building traditions present in this house, uses stabilized adobe blocks to form load-bearing walls, exposed on both the interior and exterior. The floors are made of exposed colored concrete, and the roof is framed with recycled timbers and ceiling planks from old barns. French doors salvaged from a demolished hotel open on to the central courtyard. The adjacent, detached guest house has a telescoping or shotgun plan, a single bay wide with the rooms aligned in a row perpendicular to the street but aligned so that every room has a south-facing window, ideal for passive solar gain.

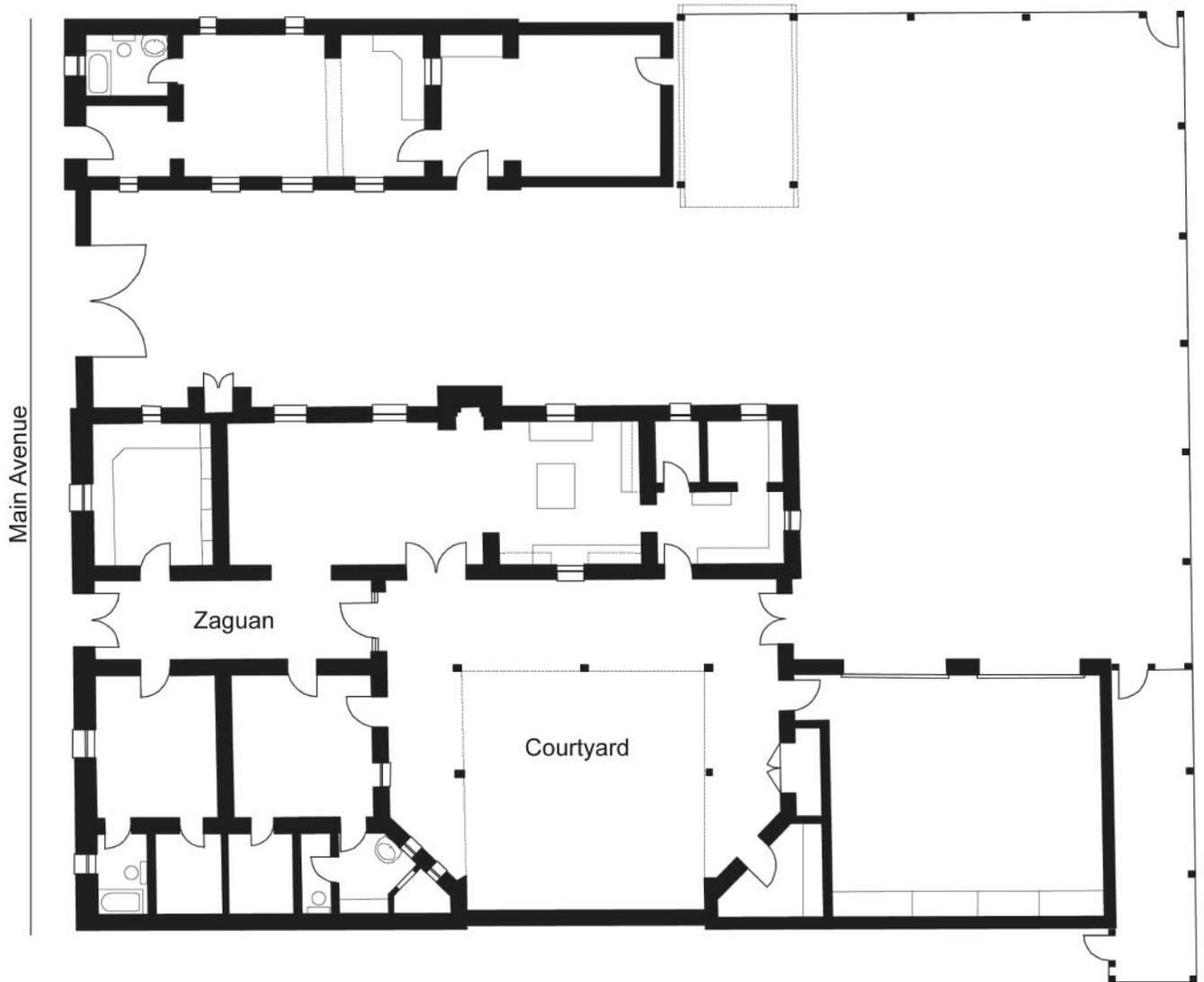


Fig. 14.57 – Exterior, Hardy House, looking east. Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery

Fig. 14.58 – Plan, Hardy House. Courtesy Preservation Studies, CALA, University of Arizona



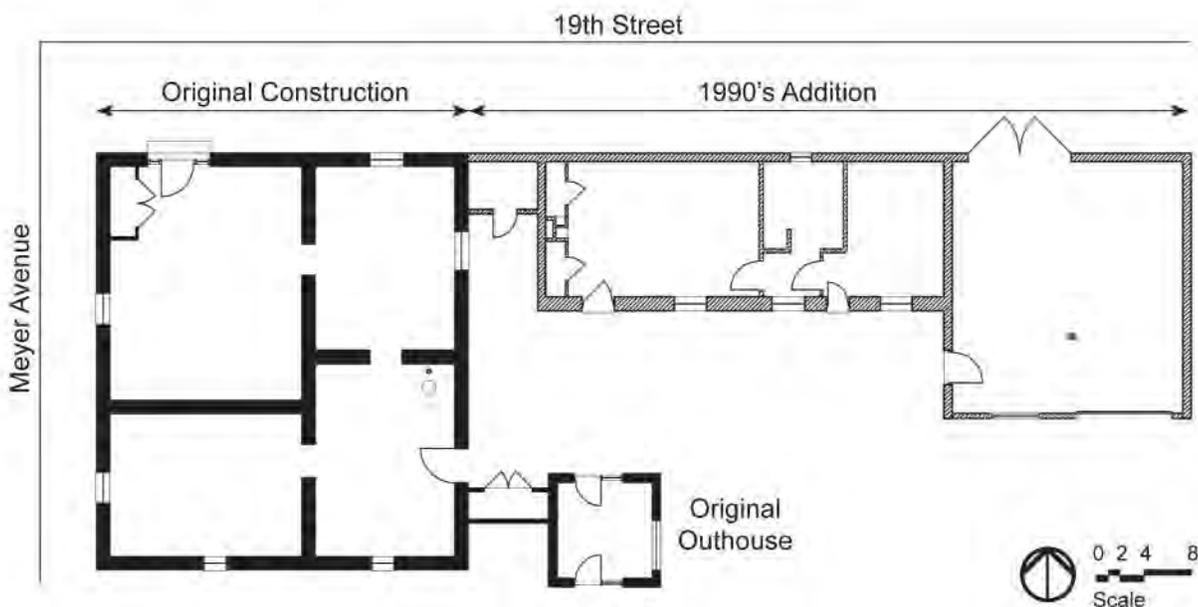
## 22. Crow Residence, 901 S. Meyer Avenue

This pyramidal cottage reflects the transition from the Sonoran row-house type (in its site placement and adobe construction) to the variety of American “folk” house types (in its freestanding, four-square plan and pyramidal roof), widespread exposure to which was first made possible by the railroad. The house first appears on the 1919 Sanborn Fire Insurance map, although the construction materials and methods indicate a construction date closer to the turn-of-the-century. The pyramidal roof is of the gable-on-hip type with a small louvered gable vent. Its earlier wooden shakes were replaced by corrugated metal during the 1990 construction of an addition. The interior wooden plank ceilings are original, as are the floors in all but the front room, which



*Fig. 14.59 – Exterior, Crow Residence, looking southeast. Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery*

*Fig. 14.40 – Plan, Crow Residence. Courtesy Preservation Studios, CALA, University of Arizona*



has since had radiant heating installed. New doors and double-paned windows have been added but the original locations of the apertures were maintained. The wooden plank closets in the front and back room are recent additions. The CMU structure behind the main house, built in the 1950s after a sewer line was installed, marks the location of the original outhouse. The bedroom and garage addition, built in the late 1990s by current owner John Crow, is constructed of traditional, modern, and recycled materials and provides a contrast to the original building.

### **23. Meyer Avenue Project, S. Meyer Avenue between 18th and 19th Streets (exterior only)**

This infill development, begun in 1989 and completed in 2003, includes fifteen single-family residential units that express the stylistic diversity of the surrounding Barrio Viejo neighborhood. Using previously vacant lots, the developer, Rammed Earth Development, built a variety of rammed earth houses, including a duplex, two triplexes, and a number of detached units. Although designed for individual clients, in their layout and close proximity the houses ensure an interactive community like that of the Barrio. The project site was designed with the minimum allowable street width and the units with shallow setbacks, interior patios and courtyards, and off-street garages. The buildings also incorporate traditional use of heavy mass building blocks with light wooden porch additions sporting tin roofs and canales, all building elements found in the adjacent Barrio Viejo.



*Fig. 14.41 – Exterior, Meyer Avenue Project, looking southeast. Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery*



Fig. 14.42 – Plan, Brittain Residence. Courtesy Preservation Studios, CALA, University of Arizona

Fig. 14.45 – Exterior, Brittain Residence, looking east. Courtesy of Rocky Brittain

#### 24. Brittain Residence, 571-581 S. Meyer Avenue

This rambling set of buildings was built some time between 1871, which is the first recorded sale of the property, and 1909, when it shows up in its entirety (with the exception of the new bathrooms) on the Sanborn maps. The house consists of a string of rooms edging the north and east property lines, enclosing a central courtyard. It differs from a typical Sonoran rowhouse in that it does not close off the courtyard from the street. The complex is typically constructed of adobe block with adobe and lime plaster. Originally, most of the structures had earthen roofs which were later covered with wood-frame gable, hip and shed roofs probably in the late 1800s. Judging from wall thickness and materials, the northeastern room appears to be one the first rooms constructed. Wood details, such as window trim and porch additions indicate the gradual incorporation of American stylistic preferences after the arrival of the railroad. The bath house was constructed with concrete block sometime after the 1949 Sanborn map. The Brittain's purchased the property in 1982, at which time the courtyard was bare with six two-room apartments surrounding it. During their initial stabilization and rehabilitation work with a Federal grant some of

the walls collapsed when the original plaster was removed. New adobes were cast and sun-dried in the courtyard to reconstruct these walls. Since then, the Brittain's have repaired, remodeled and refurbished the complex into their own residence, an office and three apartments. The porches and the landscape have been added including the dirt storage bins in the driveway for repairing adobe walls as needed.

#### 25. Cushing Street Bar, 343-353 W. Cushing Street (lunch venue)

Originally built as a residence in 1869, this building was converted into a store in 1880. The corner entry and the chamfered wall are typical indications of a commercial establishment in the Sonoran urban design tradition. Although more apparent in larger Spanish Colonial cities, the chamfered corner allows a smooth transition from one street to the next and more space for casual conversation at the corner entry. A 1973 addition by architect Harris Sobin included an extension of the building along Meyer Avenue and a small patio and restaurant amenities, all created using forms, materials, and details compatible with those of the original structure.



Fig. 14.44 – Exterior, Cushing Street Bar. Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery

**26. Valencia House and Brick Row Houses, 432-446 S. Convent Avenue (exterior only)**

Both of these buildings were designed by pioneer Tucson architect Henry Jaastad in 1907 and 1909, respectively, and show the hybrid products of this period of transition between the Sonoran and American building traditions. The Valencia House on the corner has a single layer of clay brick that envelops an earlier adobe building in the American Territorial idiom with a pyramidal roof form. The second, four-unit rowhouse building adheres to the Sonoran tradition of a continuous facade but is constructed of fired clay brick walls and has the wood frame hipped roof of the American tradition.

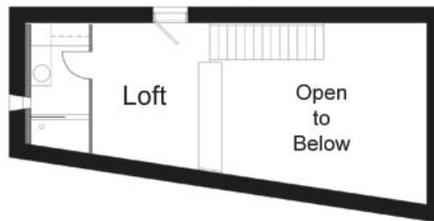
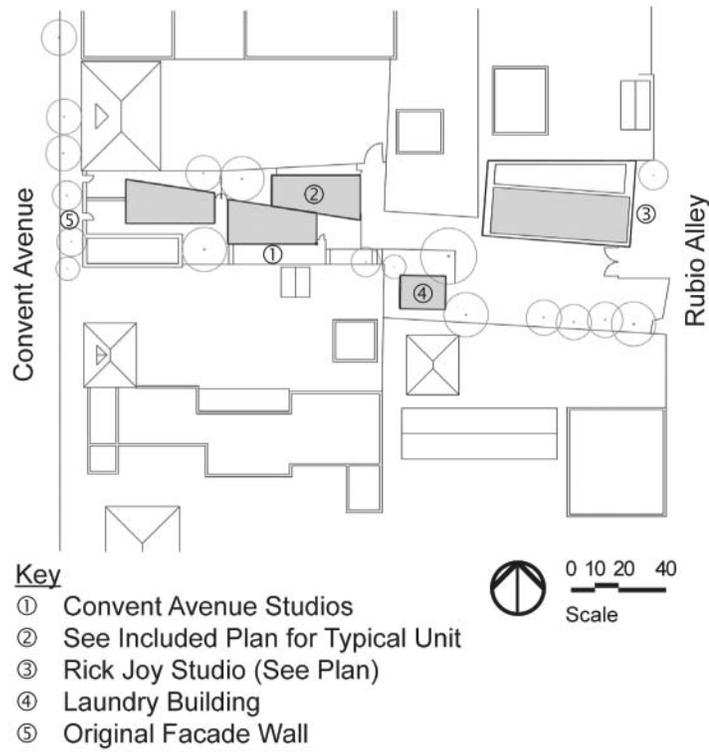
**27. Convent Avenue Studios, 469 S. Convent Avenue**

An interesting juxtaposition of old and new characterizes this complex of three loft studios designed in 1997 by architect Rick Joy. The orig-

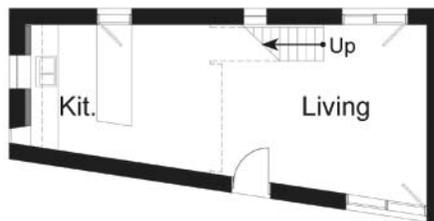
inal site was an abandoned Sonoran rowhouse with the street facade wall as the only viable remnant. This wall was preserved as a contributing feature of the Barrio Viejo streetscape; behind it three detached, wedge-shaped, one-and-a-half-story apartments were constructed, oriented so as to create intimate courtyard spaces for each. Although not complying with traditional Sonoran site planning principles, the distinctly contemporary construction, invisible from the street, responds to the vernacular building material palette of the Barrio through the use of earthen walls and oxidized corrugated metal for the shed roofs and other details. Supported on concrete foundation stem walls, the non-reinforced, exposed rammed earth walls are approximately 24" thick, cast monolithically in standard concrete slip forms. The earthen mix on this project combined soils from three different sources in the Tucson area, chosen for their color and structural integrity and blended with a small amount of iron



*Fig. 14.45 – Exterior, Valencia House and Brick Row Houses. Courtesy R. Brooks Jeffery*



Second Floor



Ground Floor

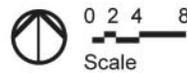


Fig. 14.46 – Site Plan, Convent Avenue Studios (facing Convent Avenue) and Rick Joy Studio (facing Rubio Alley). Courtesy Andrew Gorski after Rick Joy.

Fig. 14.47 – Typical unit plan, Convent Avenue Studios. Courtesy Andrew Gorski after Rick Joy.



*Fig. 14.48 – Exterior, Convent Avenue Studios from the street. Courtesy of Bill Timmerman*

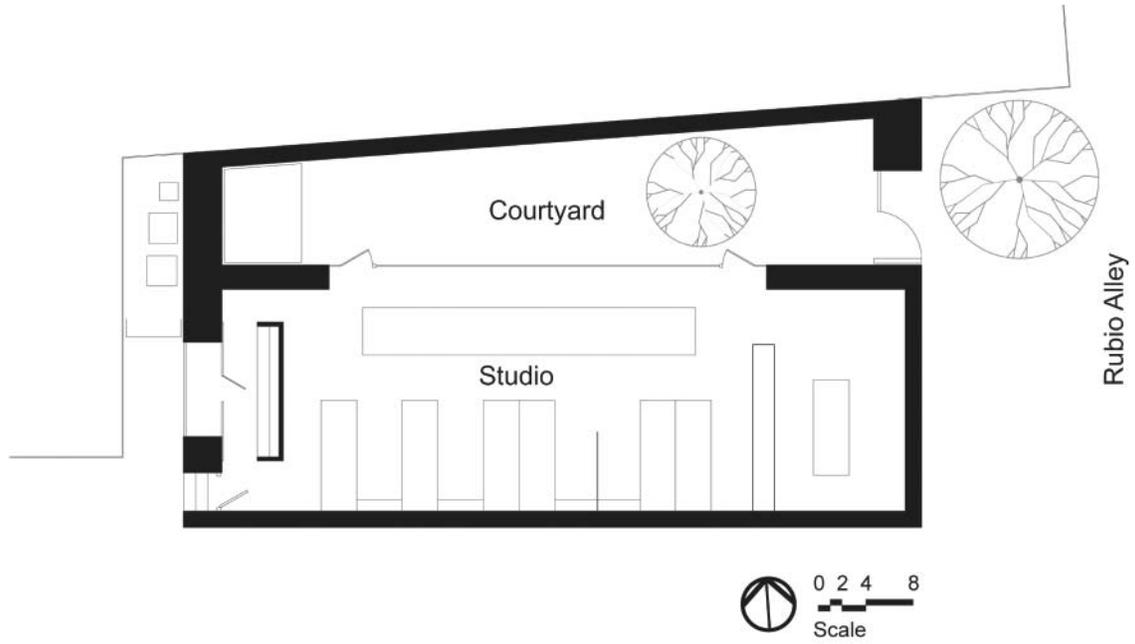


*Fig. 14.49 – Exterior, typical unit, Convent Avenue Studios. Courtesy of Bill Timmerman*



*Fig. 14.50 – Interior, typical unit, Convent Avenue Studios. Courtesy of Bill Timmerman*

oxide pigment and 3% Portland cement. This project has won Joy much acclaim, not only because of his creative use of traditional materials, but also as a precedent for the reclamation of an abandoned property in an historic neighborhood.



*Fig. 14.51 – Plan, Rick Joy Studio. Courtesy Andrew Gorski after Rick Joy.*

*Fig. 14.52 – Interior, Rick Joy Studio. Courtesy of Bill Timmerman*

### **28. Rick Joy Studio, 400 S. Rubio Alley**

Sitting on the lot behind the Convent Avenue Studios, Joy's architectural office exploits the use of both traditional and contemporary building materials. The property is defined at its edges by 14'-high rammed earth walls that enclose a narrow 60' courtyard on the north and form a single-room work studio on the south. In the studio, a floor-to-ceiling north-facing glass wall admits the natural light reflected off the south-facing wall of the courtyard. The 22'-wide, 60'-long, and 11'-tall studio space is divided into three zones: a conference area with a skylight that floods light onto the exposed rammed earth wall; the work area; and the service area divided by a single maple wall. The bathroom is actually interpolated within the 3'-thick west wall of the building. There is a poetic balance in the building's minimalist use of forms, materials, and details reflecting those of Tucson's vernacular traditions, as well as those of the immediate Barrio Viejo context.

### 29. Pascale Court, 209-219 W. 17th Street

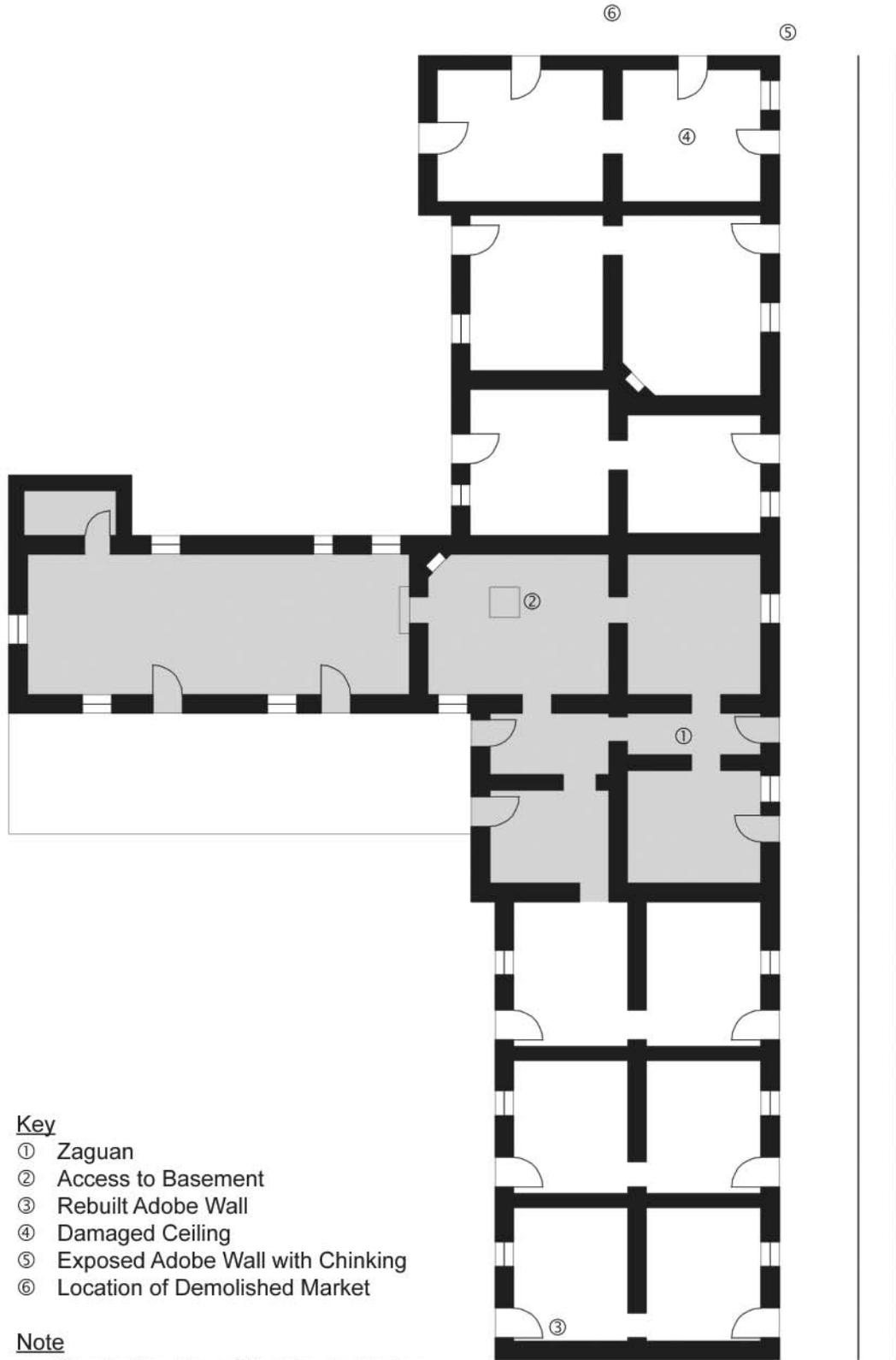
This set of adobe Sonoran rowhouses, built sometime before 1879, is what remains of a large family compound begun by Italian immigrant Juan Pascale. The original house, located along Convent Avenue, grew north along Convent Avenue and west along 17th street in a series of attached houses, two rooms deep, to form an interior courtyard, typical of the Sonoran urban tradition. In the 1970's, the market located on the northeast corner of the block was demolished, before a preservation organization stepped in to purchase the property. In its current condition there are several opportunities to survey traditional construction techniques and the use of locally available materials. Along the Convent

Avenue elevation are several patches of exposed adobe that reveal a layering of strata typical of earthen construction. A residual portion of the demolished market features chinking, or the placement of small stone inset into the wall to give the plaster more bonding strength. Prominent interior features include broad wood lintels over openings and corner fireplaces. A small basement can be accessed through the floor in the original construction. Damage to a ceiling in the structure's northeast corner provides a glimpse at how common materials, such as packing crates, were used to support the earthen roof.



*Fig. 14.55 – Exterior, Pascale Court. Courtesy of R. Brooks Jeffery*

*Fig. 14.54 – Plan, Pascale Court. Courtesy of Andrew Gorski.*

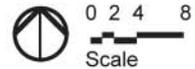


**Key**

- ① Zaguan
- ② Access to Basement
- ③ Rebuilt Adobe Wall
- ④ Damaged Ceiling
- ⑤ Exposed Adobe Wall with Chinking
- ⑥ Location of Demolished Market

**Note**

Shaded Portion of the Plan Indicates the Original Juan Pascale House



---

# 15

Hayden 1940



Large Pueblo  
Structure

Cummings 1936-1938  
Haury 1939



---

# TUMAMOC HILL AND UNIVERSITY INDIAN RUIN

Paul Fish

**T**his archaeological tour focuses on the residential and ceremonial architecture of two key prehispanic villages located in urban Tucson. Ongoing, interdisciplinary research on the prehistoric Hohokam in the Tucson Basin is focused on such topics as land use and landscape as the interface between societies and their environments, and the societal institutions developed for the organization of population and territory under conditions of growing political complexity. The two villages of Tumamoc Hill and University Indian Ruin represent a very early and a very late portion of the Hohokam archaeological sequence, respectively. Tumamoc Hill is a unique hilltop site that was occupied during the Early Agricultural Period (500 BCE - 1 CE) and the Early Ceramic Tortolita phase (400-600 CE). University Indian Ruin was a large central village inhabited by farmers who cultivated a hinterland of dispersed areas during the last centuries before Spanish contact.

## Tumamoc Hill

Rising 700' above the floodplain in central Tucson, Tumamoc Hill is a flat-topped peak of the volcanic Tucson Mountains on the western edge of the Santa Cruz River (fig. 15.1). It supports a rich variety of Sonoran Desert upland vegetation, including saguaros and leguminous trees. A prominent Tucson



Fig. 15.1 – Bird’s-eye view of Tumamoc Hill showing sweeping view of the Tucson Basin. © Adriel Heisey, AZ11-4545-28

landmark, Tumamoc Hill is one of the most extensive, massively built, and complexly organized *cerros de trincheras* settlements in southern Arizona. This Spanish term is applied to an unusual kind of site marked by location atop a hill and linear walls and terraces, together with other stone constructions (fig. 15.2). Such features are concentrated at the summit of Tumamoc Hill and include massive encircling walls and terraces, an elaborate trail system, smaller terraces, more than 125 circular to rectangular stone outlines (most indicating the remains of houses), and an extensive array of rock art. The hilltop situation of the Tumamoc Hill village was unique among contemporary settlements in the Tucson Basin. Locations near permanent water sources along the intermittent Santa Cruz River were preferred and densely occupied.

Massive stone terraces and walls around the top of the hill were constructed prior to 100 CE. These represent the earliest known “public” architecture in Arizona, in that they are of a scale requiring sustained communal labor for building. Several centuries later during the Tortolita phase, the Tumamoc Hill summit became the location of a large village with more than 100 houses for early farmers who had recently begun to make and use pottery on a regular basis. These houses had stone foundations of dry masonry and domed superstructures constructed of poles from trees such as desert willow, woven brush, and packed earth (fig. 15.3). Early

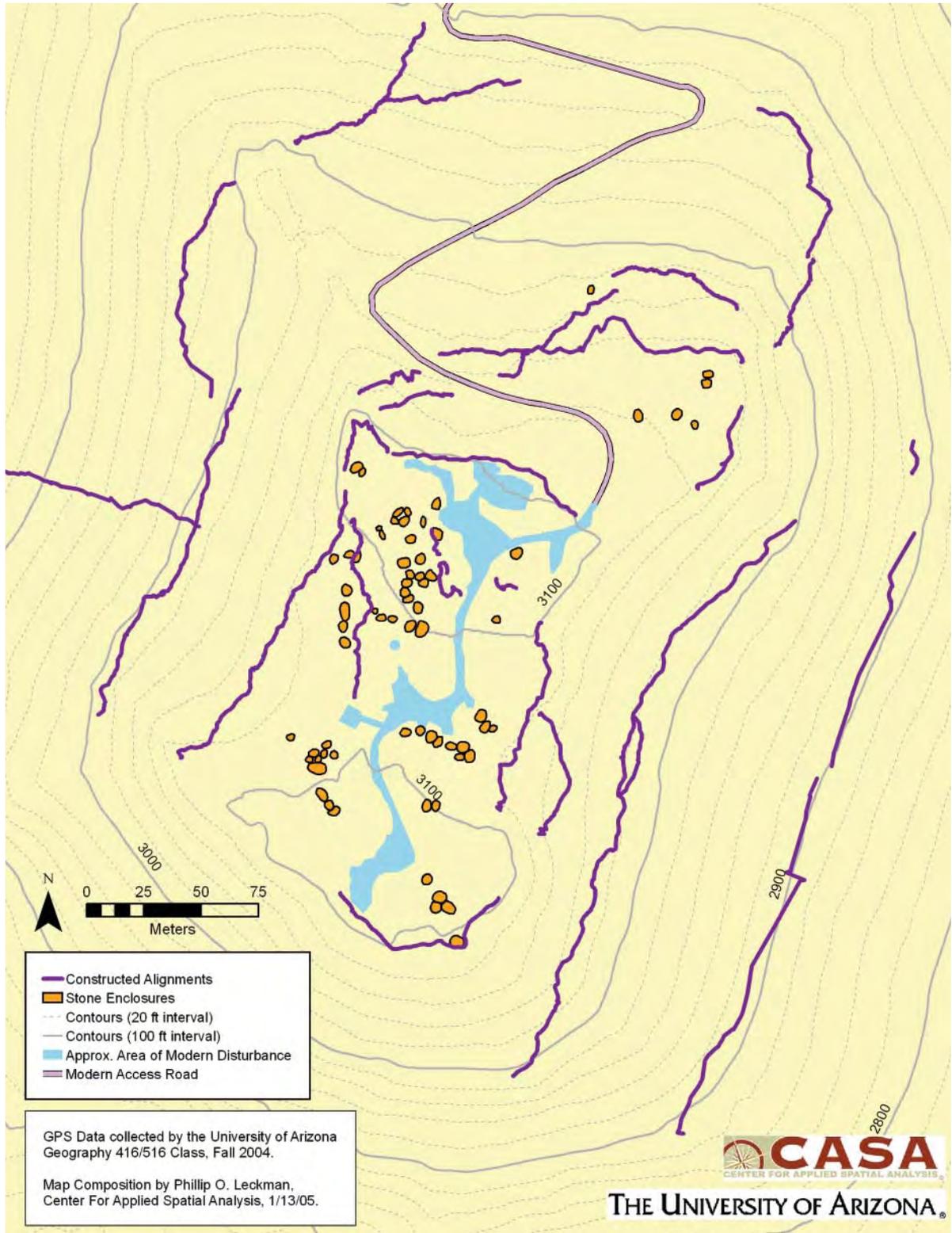


Fig. 15.2 – Map of Tumamoc Hill archaeology showing the compounds, plazas and encircling walls. Courtesy of Phillip O. Leckman, Center for Applied Spatial Analysis, University of Arizona.

20th-century descriptions of the site suggest that these houses may have surrounded a large central plaza with an adjacent large ceremonial or community structure; however, decades of recent construction including forest fire observation towers, University observatories, and a variety of communication facilities have disturbed the summit locales so significantly as to preclude confirmation of these aspects of village layout.

The villagers and their neighbors in the region used some of the earliest known irrigation technology in the New World and corn was a mainstay of their diet. Artifact assemblages recovered from houses and on the surface of the site indicate a full range of domestic and ritual activities. The presence of obsidian, marine shell, and turquoise indicates participation in long distance regional exchange networks.

Trincheras sites with stone terraces and walls are distributed across the southern Southwest and northwest Mexico. Their construction on hills

spans the entire sequence of prehispanic agricultural village life in the region from 2000 BCE to 1500 CE. They always represented unusual locations in settlement systems dominated by villages predominantly on valley floors near the best agricultural land and easily accessible domestic water.

Since colonial times, trincheras sites such as Tumamoc Hill have spurred widespread public interest well as scholarly inquiry. Many researchers have favored a defensive explanation for the hilltop locations and massive terrace and wall constructions, while others have posited agricultural, ceremonial, and signaling functions for these settlements. Proponents on all sides of the trincheras debates have made reference to Tumamoc Hill in their arguments.

## University Indian Ruin

University Indian Ruin is a Hohokam center of the late Classic period (1350-1450 CE) with



*Fig. 15.5 – Conjectured drawing of Tumamoc Hill house with stone foundations and a woven brush and packed earth superstructure. Drawn by Ron Beckwith, courtesy of Paul Fish.*

ceremonial public architecture in the form of an earthen platform mound that served as an elevated base for adobe buildings (fig. 15.4). The site is located in the Indian Ridge neighborhood about seven miles east of downtown Tucson, near the confluence of the Rillito Creek and Pantano Wash. A former archaeology student donated a portion (13 acres) of the site to the University of Arizona in 1933. Under a cooperative agreement between the University, Pima County, and the Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC), the site was opened to the public for several years for a self-guided tour of the ruins and excavation areas. During the 1930s, the site was operated as an “outdoor” laboratory. Numerous excavations in both the platform mound precinct and residential

areas were conducted first as University field schools and later as a CCC work project. An historic home and other constructions by the CCC are included in the inventory of cultural resources for the site.

University Indian Ruin was a prominent, central place in the late prehispanic settlement pattern of the eastern Tucson Basin. The boundaries of this important village extended well beyond the present-day 13 acre preserve and it was the only settlement in the area with public or ceremonial architecture in addition to adobe dwellings. This village served as the public focal point for a much larger community of interrelated and dispersed populations living in numerous surrounding hamlets and small villages.

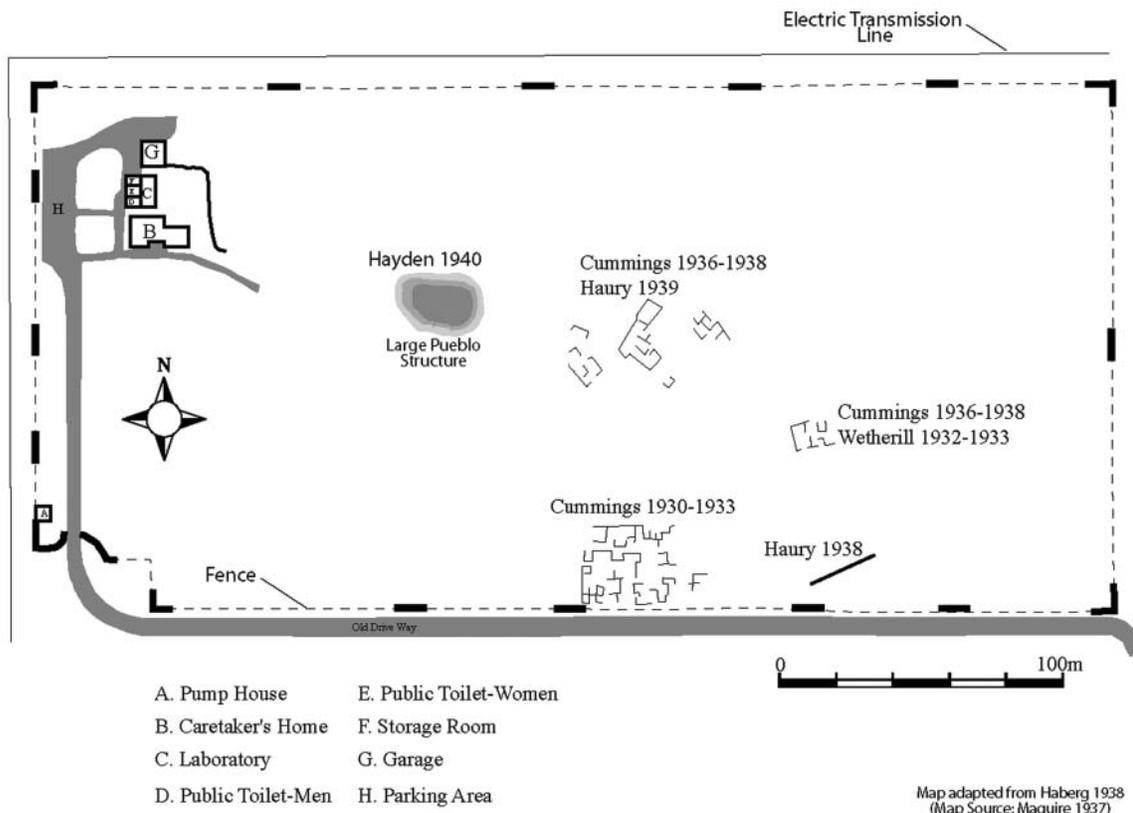


Fig. 15.4 – University Indian Ruin site plan showing recorded prehispanic architectural features. Courtesy of Paul Fish

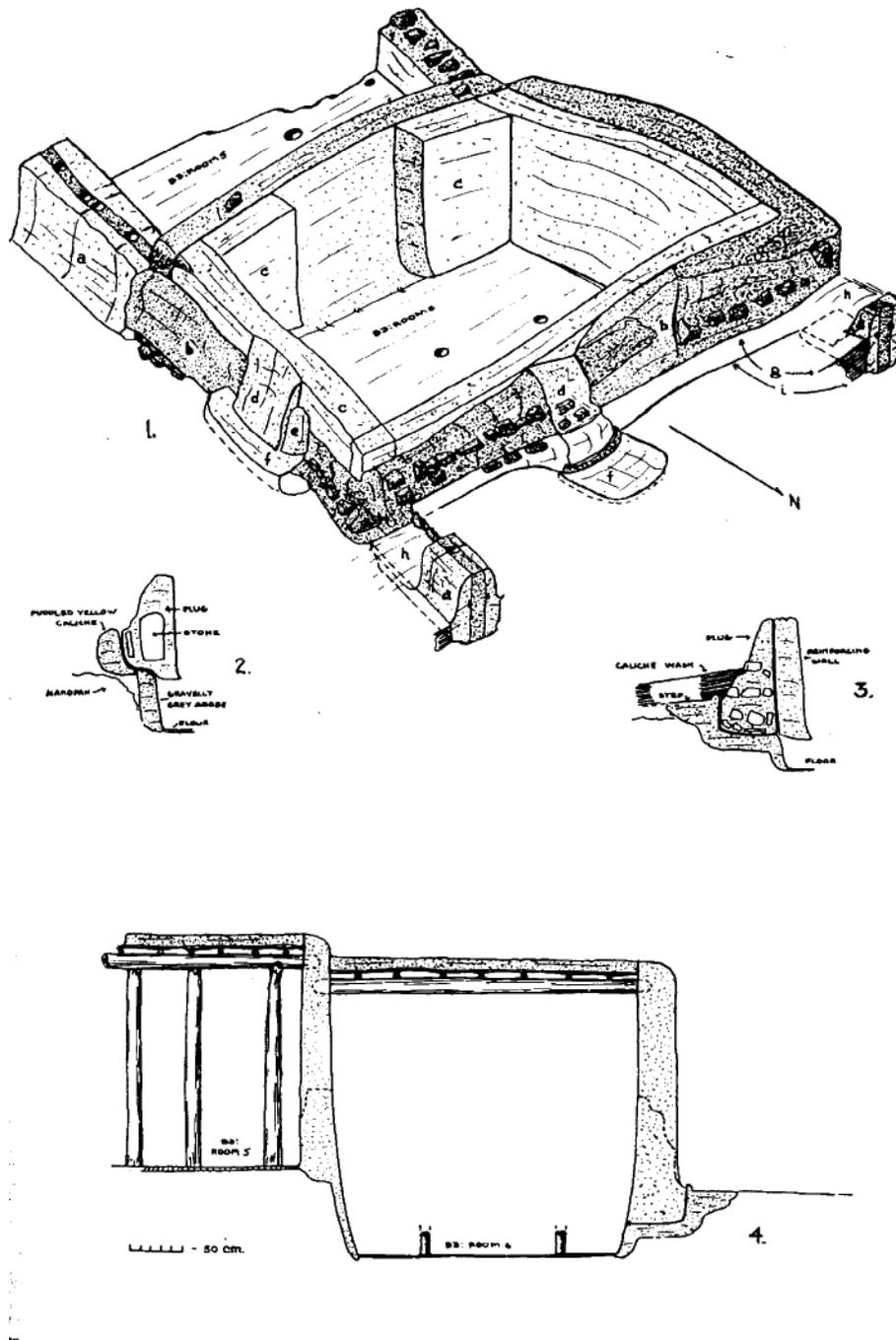
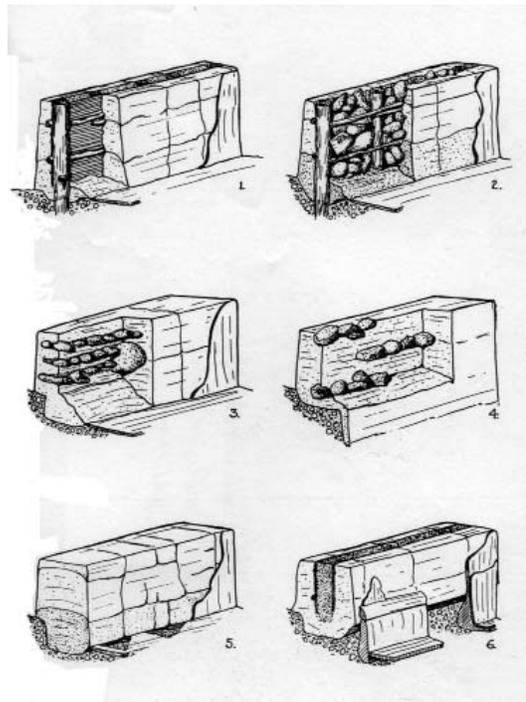


Fig. 15.5 – University Indian Ruin wall and room construction in isometric plan (top) and room section (bottom). Courtesy of Southwestern Parks and Monuments Association

Prehispanic inhabitants of University Indian Ruin lived in clusters of conjoined rectangular adobe rooms (fig. 15.5) within walled compounds. Their use of pine and fir timbers for roof beams permits precise dating of the by means of dendrochronology. Tree ring dates from charred vigas recovered during previous excavations indicate major construction during the late 14th century. The reported discovery of a Spanish colonial majolica ceramic bowl on the floor of one room raises the intriguing possibility that University Indian Ruin was still occupied or at least still had standing architecture in the early 1700s.

The Classic Period was a time of increasingly dense populations aggregated into larger villages and communities. The maximum extent of the University Indian Ruin village cannot be determined because of modern urban development. However, a well-studied and mapped Classic Period platform mound site in the northern Tucson Basin contained between 35 and 40 residential compounds distributed across a 3 square-kilometer village area. In this case, the village population is estimated to have been between 800 and 1200 people. It is likely that the population of the University Indian Ruin village equaled or surpassed this number.

Massive adobe walls approximately 8' in height enclosed each residential compound and platform mound precinct at University Indian Ruin (15.6). These walls are believed to reflect the architectural demarcation of social groups rather than having served a defensive function. The transition to the Classic Period around 1200 CE witnessed a major shift in the ideological basis for territorial integration and the appearance of walled compounds is correlated with these changes. In contrast to the



*Fig. 15.6 – University Indian Ruin wall types showing different earthen binders. Courtesy of Southwestern Parks and Monuments Association*

unrestricted approach to ball courts and plazas characteristic of previous Hohokam time periods, platform mounds and their precincts were first surrounded by palisades and finally by massive enclosure walls with internal divisions. Mound ritual became more centralized than ever before, while the performers and observers of communal events in mound precincts became a more exclusive subset of the population as a whole.

Adobe walled compounds represent an equally dramatic change in residential organization. Prior to the Classic Period, the standard domestic unit comprised a small group of 4 to 6 pit houses around a common courtyard with no enclosure wall. By jointly enclosing their dwellings, members of a compound tangibly demarcated a distinctive and shared social identity. Compound walls likely reflected the increasing social differentiation and organizational complexity of Classic Period society. They provided a measure of privacy, secrecy, and control for compound members, especially with regard to the accumulation of resources and stores. The walls would have effectively shielded all kinds of economic, political, and ritual interactions and negotiations from public scrutiny.

## Current Research

University Indian Ruin and Tumamoc Hill are both now owned by the University of Arizona. University Indian Ruin is on the National Register of Historic Places and the archaeological remains at Tumamoc Hill are clearly eligible for the National Register. These properties present individual and unique preservation and management challenges to the University. A major goal of a new state-of-the-art mapping program is to provide detailed spatial information to the University's Historic Preservation Committee to assist in the management of these highly significant archaeological remains.

### Southwestern Music

The Southwest is home to a musical tradition unlike any in the world. Although the influences have, at times, come from familiar lineages, the end product is unique and instantly recognizable. Waila, norteño, and mariachi are just three examples of the musical melee of the Southwest.

Waila is a raw and culturally important strain of music that moves the feet as well as the heart. Pronounced WHY-la, waila is a word the Tohono O'odham people adapted from the Spanish word for dance, baile. Spend an afternoon at Tucson's annual springtime Waila Festival and you'll see why. For no matter how full you have stuffed yourself with the traditional O'odham delicacies, the polka-like beat and wheezing violin of waila musicians are impossible to resist.

Waila found its genesis in early fiddle bands, inspired by the sounds of Europe and northern Mexico. Fully instrumental, the music is created primarily by violins and accordions. However, it is also quite common to find alto saxophones carrying a tune or a drum machine mastering the down-beat. Waila is sometimes known as "chicken scratch" music, having earned the nickname from the way the Tohono O'odham kick up their heels while dancing to waila tunes. In fact, dance is an integral part of waila music. Waila dances are all performed while rotating in a counter-clockwise manner around the floor. There are several varieties of waila dancing, all derived from an amalgamation of European and Native American dance traditions including the Bohemian watersaw and a variety of the Scottish and German schottische called the chote.

Norteño music, so named because it developed in Northern Mexico, emerged from Texan and Germanic musical styles in the 1900s. German immigrants brought breweries, miners, and the diatonic accordion to the Spanish-influenced Mexican culture. The whirling hum of the diatonic button accordion became the signature sound of norteño music. Guitars began to accompany accordionists in the 1930s, and by late 1950s and early 1960s, even more instruments had been added to the combo. Today, the most common instruments in a norteño group, or conjunto, are the accordion, bass guitar, electric bass, string bass, and drums. The music has maintained its popularity in many parts of the region, including Tucson, home of the Norteño Music Festival, which occurs every August.

No survey of southwestern roots music would be complete without acknowledging the famous mariachis. The mariachi tradition originated in the southern part of the state of Jalisco in Mexico during the 19th century, evoking notions of the troubadour singing songs of romance, heroism, revolution, deceit, and death. The brightly spangled bands were composed most frequently of violins, guitars, and vihuelas. More recently, mariachis have borrowed from jazz and Cuban music, adding the trumpet and giving the music a characteristic sound as brazen as the colors of the musicians' traditional costumes. Mariachi music is now played in such far-flung locals as Japan and Europe. But you need not travel so far. Several restaurants in Tucson feature mariachi music throughout the week.

Source: <http://www.elearn.arizona.edu/msw/>

16



---

# 20TH-CENTURY RESIDENTIAL LANDSCAPES

R. Brooks Jeffery

**T**ucson's 20th century residential landscapes represent an evolution of land-use attitudes, regulatory controls, and typological and stylistic expressions. These landscapes also play an important role in conveying Tucson's struggles throughout the 20th century to cater to a residential consumer market of newcomers driven by a certain commodified image of the southwest. From the principles of the City Beautiful Movement to those of New Urbanism, Tucson presents an evolution of national subdivision design trends that increasingly expresses the authentic identity—environmental, cultural, and political—of this place.



*Fig. 16.1 – Aerial, Catalina Footbills Estates, c1940 showing St. Philips Plaza in the middle ground. Courtesy of Arizona Historical Society/Tucson (PC177-F90-449)*

## HOPE VI Santa Rosa

HOPE VI Santa Rosa was completed in 2003 after a decade-long planning process with the intent of replacing the sterile and socially outdated public housing development that had previously occupied the site. The HOPE VI Santa Rosa project traces its origins to the Community Development Plan for Greater Santa Rosa authored by Corky Poster and students at the University of Arizona. This grass-roots planning document was adopted by the City of Tucson in 1994, which then used it as the basis for a successful HOPE VI planning grant that, in 1997, resulted in a \$14.6 million grant from the US Department of Housing and Urban Development. In addition to the development of numerous amenities aimed at improving the quality of life for low-income families in the surrounding Santa Rosa neighborhood, the HOPE VI project includes on-site development

of 60 new units of public housing, mixed with 60 new units of market rate rental housing.

Poster Frost Associates, the project's master planner and architect, incorporated site utilization patterns, building forms, and elements from the surrounding Mexican/Sonoran vernacular building types, providing an appropriate vocabulary that integrates this new construction into the existing context (fig. 16.2). Rather than the surface application of clichéd historical details, Hope VI Santa Rosa applies traditional typologies at a variety of scales, from the development of integrated streetscapes and attached dwelling units to the incorporation of specific features from the adjacent Barrio Viejo neighborhood, such as the corrugated metal wrap-around canopies, creating a visual link between the new development and its historic context.



*Fig. 16.2 – Hope VI Block Plan & Elevation Plan and elevation, typical dwelling block, Hope VI development. Courtesy of Poster Frost Associates*

## El Encanto and Colonia Solana Estates

Designed in 1928 as distinct suburban neighborhoods, the adjacent subdivisions of El Encanto Estates and Colonia Solana were southwestern variants of the planned Suburban Movement and marked a dramatic shift in subdivision design in Tucson.

The Suburban Movement, founded in the Natural Parks tradition and the City Beautiful Movement, sought to promote appealing, cohesive environments in residential communities by including a planned system of circulation, a system of parks, and the attractive placement of buildings. Suburbs designed according to these principles were planned for cities all around the United States, including Riverside, Illinois (1869), Forest Hills Park, New York (1909), the Country Club District of Kansas City, Missouri (1913-33), and Shaker Heights, Ohio (early 1920s).

Geographically, both subdivisions were defined by two main streets, Broadway Boulevard which extends east from downtown Tucson, and Country Club Road, named for the location of Tucson's first country club on the southwestern corner of the intersection of the two streets. It was an ideal location for an elite suburban resort and recreational community, with a golf course and public park forming the southern and eastern boundaries of Colonia Solana and the El Conquistador Resort Hotel, Tucson's most luxurious hotel at the time, bordering El Encanto Estates on the east.

Both subdivisions were characterized by features and amenities that were being introduced for the first time in an attempt to attract an elite residential clientele that would distinguish these communities from the gridiron subdivisions that dominated Tucson's post-railroad development. Tucson was a thriving city during this period and

contained a group of prosperous families, in addition to well-to-do winter visitors, affluent health seekers, and transplanted retirees.

Characteristics such as curvilinear street layouts, irregular lots, regional revival architectural styles, and attractive landscaping were derived from Suburban Movement ideals. Deed restrictions were also part of the marketing of these subdivisions, ensuring the enforcement of zoning controls, building setbacks, house size, house height, minimum building cost requirements, and the approval of architectural review boards. Both communities made use of Spanish words, not only in the subdivision names (El Encanto = "The Enchanted"; Colonia Solana = "Sunny Colony"), but also in the street names, in order to evoke a romantic association with Tucson's Spanish heritage. Ironically, the deed restrictions adopted by both developments prohibited people "not of White or Caucasian race" from living there (including restrictions against Mexicans, Blacks, Asians and Jews).

The deed restrictions created at the incorporation of both subdivisions dictated that the architecture be designed in southwestern styles with all designs inspected by a supervisory architect. The southwestern architectural styles of these neighborhoods reflect what were the prevailing styles throughout Tucson during the period. A strong California influence can be seen in these styles, but with local variations, including the Spanish Colonial Revival and Pueblo Revival styles. Many of the homes were built by prominent Tucson architects of the day.

With these two subdivisions, developers soon discovered that non-gridiron street patterns, southwestern architecture, and formally landscaped or desert landscaped lots with comprehensive deed restrictions appealed strongly to home buyers. These early subdivisions provided alternatives to the norm, creating a sense of community through the harmonious integration of buildings and land-

scape. Prominent agents of innovation in Tucson, El Encanto Estates and Colonia Solana implemented comprehensive community planning in Tucson and influenced the development of other Tucson suburban communities such as Catalina Foothills Estates (1928), Catalina Vista (1940) and Winterhaven (1948).

### **El Encanto Estates**

El Encanto Estates consists of a formal, symmetrical street pattern, designed in the neoclassical tradition with equally formal landscaped lots, large lawns, and non-native vegetation (fig. 16.3). In the context of an increasingly competitive development market in which each subdivision was attempting to distinguish itself from the others, El Encanto Estates' founder, W.E. Guerin, wanted to create a unique environment of privacy and peace, set apart from the surrounding Tucson gridiron subdivisions.

El Encanto Estates was designed in 1928 by the Engineering Service Corporation of Los Angeles, California. The original subdivision plan incorporates a circular, geometric pattern with a centrally located park and six tributary streets that radiate away from the center and either meet the arterial streets of the city at the periphery of the subdivision or end in cul-du-sacs within it. The central park is circular, comprising 0.74 acres of land, with a collection of desert plants ringed by slender fan palms. In contrast to Colonia Solana where new desert plants were brought in to supplement the existing natural environment, the desert vegetation in El Encanto is contained within the formal layout of the park.

The original plan called for the streets to be lined with palm trees, evidence of the California influence in the design as well as a tendency to use non-native, and even exotic, plantings. Although some native landscaping does exist, non-native landscaping dominates the entire residential community, whose atmosphere is as a result to be

associated more with the Midwest or California than with the Arizona desert. In addition to its vegetation, the landscape is defined by property walls, hedges, and roadside curbing, all implemented to reinforce the continuity of the street pattern and the formal division of the properties.

### **Colonia Solana**

Colonia Solana was designed in 1928 by Stephen Child, a nationally known and highly respected landscape architect who had studied under Frederick Law Olmsted, Jr. at Harvard University. Olmsted's father is considered the patriarch of landscape architecture and he designed the first of the American suburban communities, Riverside, Illinois, while his son designed Forest Hills Gardens, New York.

The plan of Colonia Solana shares many of the characteristics of Olmsted's design for Riverside and it followed the precepts of the Suburban Movement through the use of natural land forms and the preservation of native vegetation and wildlife (fig.16.4). Nature and the rural landscape were seen throughout as positive values which would enrich human life.

Stephen Child described the main features of Colonia Solana as typical desert country with a gentle slope and containing one major and two minor arroyos. Rather than filling the washes, or dry stream beds, as was typically done, Child wished to emphasize them and make them influence the design. He stressed the importance of creating "Arroyo Chico Parque" as a parkway some 250' wide and half a mile long with parallel roads and footpaths and native desert plants of all kinds, since the original desert growth was sparse. He felt that Colonial Solana would thus contain the "desert beauty than many now ride miles to see" and he set aside 9.4 of its 160 acres for parks and open space.

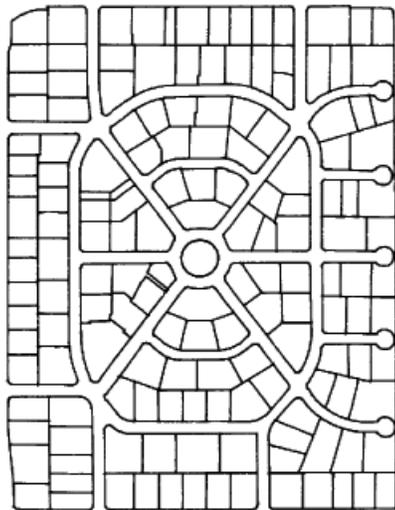
Child also proposed that site landscaping in the subdivision, as well as its architecture, be regulated by a “jury”. In addition to native tree species planted in the arroyo, including palo verde, greasewood, and mesquite, cacti were also used, including saguaro, ocotillo, barrel cactus, cholla, prickly pear, and others. Child thought this sampling of native desert vegetation within the subdivision would be an unusual and welcome amenity. Moreover, as the properties were developed, most homeowners added natural landscaping similar to that found in Colonia Solana’s open spaces, reinforcing a sense of cohesiveness throughout the neighborhood. The street system delimits generous one-acre, non-rectilinear, landscaped lots that provide desirable building sites, mostly with north/south orientations. The narrow, 16’-wide, uncurbed streets are also used for site drainage.

One of the principal features of the Colonia Solana landscape today was initially its worst eyesore: the El Conquistador Water Tower.

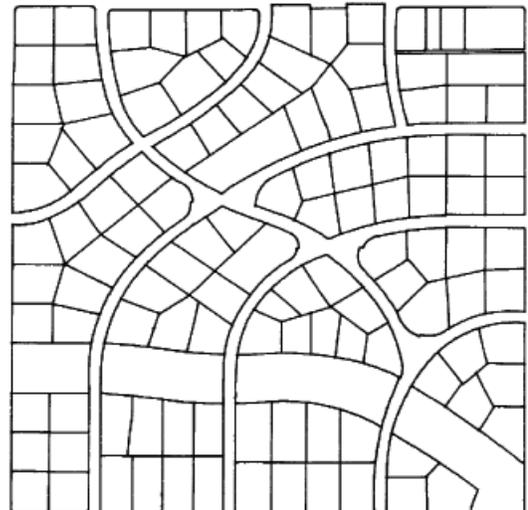
The water tower was a necessary piece of urban infrastructure, intended to supply water to the growing resort hotel, golf course, and elite residential subdivisions. Originally unmasked and utilitarian in appearance, it was sheathed in a Spanish Colonial Revival envelope in 1929 and has become a prominent landmark contributing to Colonia Solana’s residential landscape.

Although modest compared to Riverside, Colonia Solana is a skillfully designed subdivision that embodied a new approach to the suburban communities made possible by the growing popularity of the automobile, beginning in the 1920s. Moreover, with the development of Colonia Solana, desert vegetation began to be recognized as a positive element in local landscape design, in contrast to the then-dominant desire to use non-native plants in order to create an oasis in the desert.

(text excerpted from National Register of Historic Places Nomination for Colonia Solana Historic District [Phoenix: Arizona State Parks,



*Fig. 16.5 – El Encanto Estates Subdivision Plan. Courtesy of Arizona Architectural Archives, CALA, University of Arizona.*



*Fig. 16.4 – Colonia Solana Subdivision Plan. Courtesy of Arizona Architectural Archives, CALA, University of Arizona*

1989] and National Register of Historic Places Nomination for El Encanto Estates Historic District [Phoenix: Arizona State Parks, 1988]

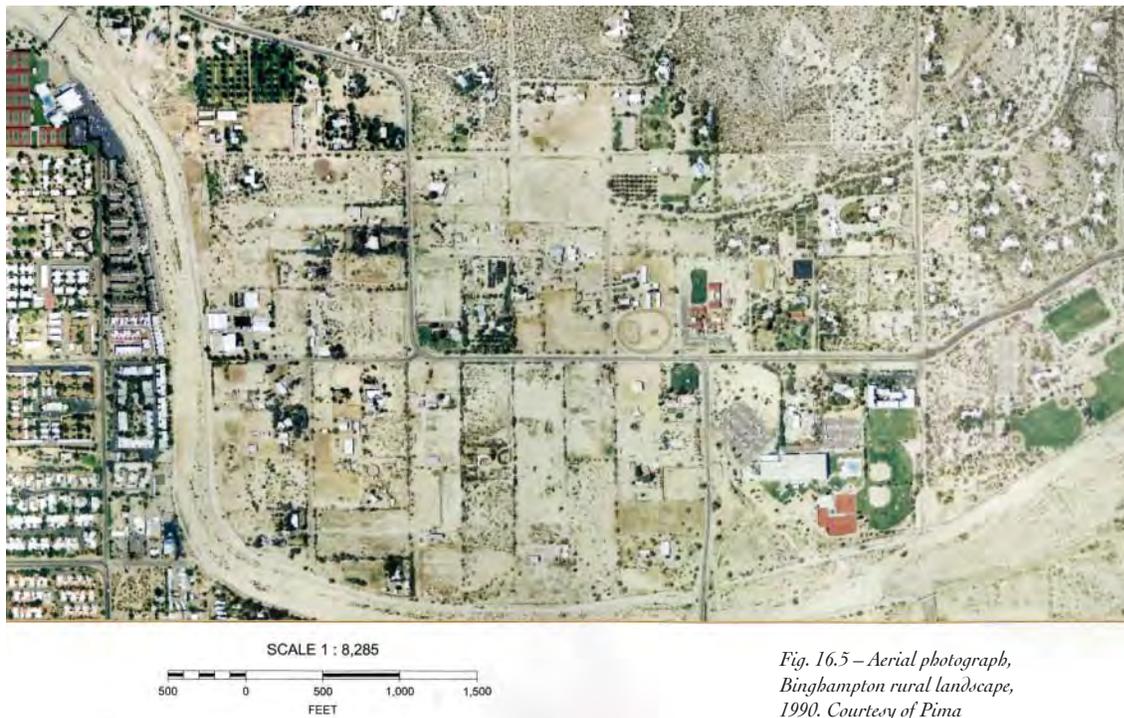
## Binghampton

Binghampton is a 584-acre residential/agricultural enclave located just north of the Tucson city limits in the flat, active floodplain on the north side of the Rillito River and south of the protruding foothills of the Catalina Mountains (fig. 16.5). It is geographically and culturally distinct from the adjacent low-density, upscale residential foothills development to the north and the higher density urban development to the south.

Despite increasing encroachment by residential and commercial development, the area has been in continuous rural use, from its founding as a Mormon agrarian settlement in 1898 through the post-Mormon era of small ranches and farms that can still be seen today. Once a lush, natural riparian

habitat of cottonwood, alder, sycamore, willow, and walnut, the area was greatly modified by its Mormon settlers beginning in 1898. Divided into large, 20- and 40-acre rectilinear tracts, and watered by an extensive ditch irrigation system, the area was transformed into a patchwork of cultivated crops and orchard and dairy pasture fields—with the exception of a 40-acre Latter Day Saints cemetery on the northeast corner of the district. Irrigation-intensive agricultural practices typically gave way to less water intensive uses such as horse culture, small livestock culture, or horticulture. Many of the once fertile agricultural fields are now retired but they still contribute to the overall scale and feeling of the rural landscape.

Mormons have been a part of the cultural landscape of Arizona since the 1870s, establishing small agrarian communities where they could practice their religion freely. By the mid-1880s,



*Fig. 16.5 – Aerial photograph, Binghampton rural landscape, 1990. Courtesy of Pima County*

there were two dozen towns, with a total population of 3,000, successfully established along the Little Colorado River in northern Arizona, forming part of the Mormon Corridor from Fredonia near the Utah border down into Chihuahua and Sonora, Mexico. The Mormon agricultural presence in the Tucson area dates to 1898 and lasted into the first decades of the twentieth century. The first parcel purchased by Mormons was the 60-acre Davidson Ranch whose pyramidal-cottage is a prominent landmark of vernacular architecture amidst contemporary development. The population of Binghampton grew, especially after an influx of Mormon refugees from Mexico, and in 1916 an additional 60 acres were purchased on the south side of the Rillito River where a traditional Mormon town plan was laid out. This area, for many years a self-contained community of Mormons, began to lose its identity after World War II, when it was absorbed into the surrounding city.

Today, it is usually by automobile that one sees the features of Binghampton's rural vernacular landscape: pecan orchards, horse pastures, open fields, secluded tree-shaded residences, stone retaining walls, post and rail fences, and tree-lined drives.

(text excerpted from National Register of Historic Places Nomination for Binghampton Rural Historic Landscape [Phoenix: Arizona State Parks, 2002]).

### Catalina Foothills Estates

The Catalina Foothills Estates, one of southern Arizona's earliest master-planned communities, was the creation of Tucson real estate entrepreneur and builder John Murphey and his business partner and wife, Helen Murphey. The Murpheys had dreams of building the kind of residential communities that would attract wealthy clients from the East to the desert resort city

of Tucson. In 1927, the Murpheys hired Swiss architect Josias Joesler to interpret their vision of elite communities and buildings that adopted the various historical revival styles popular in other parts of the West. Joesler's extensive travels, combined with his thorough education in both the technical and artistic aspects of architecture provided the Murpheys with just the palette of styles needed to build their vision.

In 1928, at a combined homestead and federal land auction, the Murpheys purchased 7,000 acres of land in the foothills of the Catalina Mountains north of the Rillito River (fig 16.1); the area was four miles north of Tucson's city limits at the time. They sought to emulate a Mexican village of haciendas, complete with church and plaza; their success may be measured by the prominent and affluent clientele attracted to Catalina Foothills Estates, then and today. Much of the current popularity of Catalina Foothills Estates is due to the establishment of original deed restrictions that controlled the development of the community and preserved the stunning foothills topography, views, and natural vegetation, thus attesting to the importance of natural landscaping in the overall marketing of an estate community in the desert. In addition, every aspect of the development process was controlled by Murphey, from land purchase, lot placement, and water distribution to architectural design by Joesler and construction by Murphey's building company.

Joesler, as supervisory architect, controlled the architectural design as well as the surveying of each property, which at the time averaged over 4 acres. He took advantage of the topography by laying out the home sites based on their views, a principle which he later refined in the design of each individual house. The houses were larger and more luxurious than those in town, conforming to their large, hilly lots and taking into consideration the increased demand for larger houses

in unique settings to satisfy an affluent clientele of newcomers.

The majority of houses in Catalina Foothills Estates were designed in Spanish Colonial Revival style. They were usually centered around a patio or pool, with low-pitched, tiled roofs, smooth stucco or burnt adobe walls, sculpted wooden members, and ornamental ironwork, all crafted with a sense of antiquity which enhanced the style. The use of arches, breezeways, and patios also represented the outdoor lifestyle advertised by the Murpheys to attract Easterners to Tucson. The sprawling lots and equally sprawling plans distinguished Joesler's foothills homes from those in the city. These linear, "ranch" houses became larger and more linear with the concurrent improvement of mechanical air handling systems, whereas smaller systems required a more compact plan.

As they began the development of Catalina Foothills Estates as a premier residential community, the Murpheys also envisioned a village center that emulated those of the Mexican towns to which they had often traveled. Named St. Philip's Plaza, this town center (fig 16.6) would comprise a church (St. Philip's in the Hills Episcopal Church), a tea room/gift shop (El Merendero), the Catalina Foothills Estates sales office, the offices of the Murphey Building Company,

Joesler's studio, and a studio for the prominent painter Hutton Webster, all surrounding a plaza in the form of a "U". From Joesler's architecture representing a rustic interpretation of the Spanish Colonial Revival style to the sense of permanence implied by a town center meeting the necessities of both spiritual and human sustenance, St. Philip's Plaza was a showcase for what Catalina Foothills Estates as a whole intended to be.

Murphey's development drove Tucson's expansion northward and other low-density foothills developments soon transformed the entire Catalina foothills into an affluent residential area. Unfortunately, much of the original rural character of Catalina Foothills Estates has been lost. The deed restrictions established by Murphey in 1928 were not renewed when they expired in 1978, causing a gradual, but profound, change in the residential landscape. Home sites shrank from a minimum of 4 acres to a quarter of an acre, thus denuding the foothills desert of the lush vegetation that was its original marketing asset. After Joesler's death in 1956, his integrated design approach and supervisory control was succeeded by an eclectic potpourri of styles, forms, materials, and scales that unequivocally distinguishes the two periods of architectural development.

In particular, the second half of the 20th century produced a broad array of Modern homes



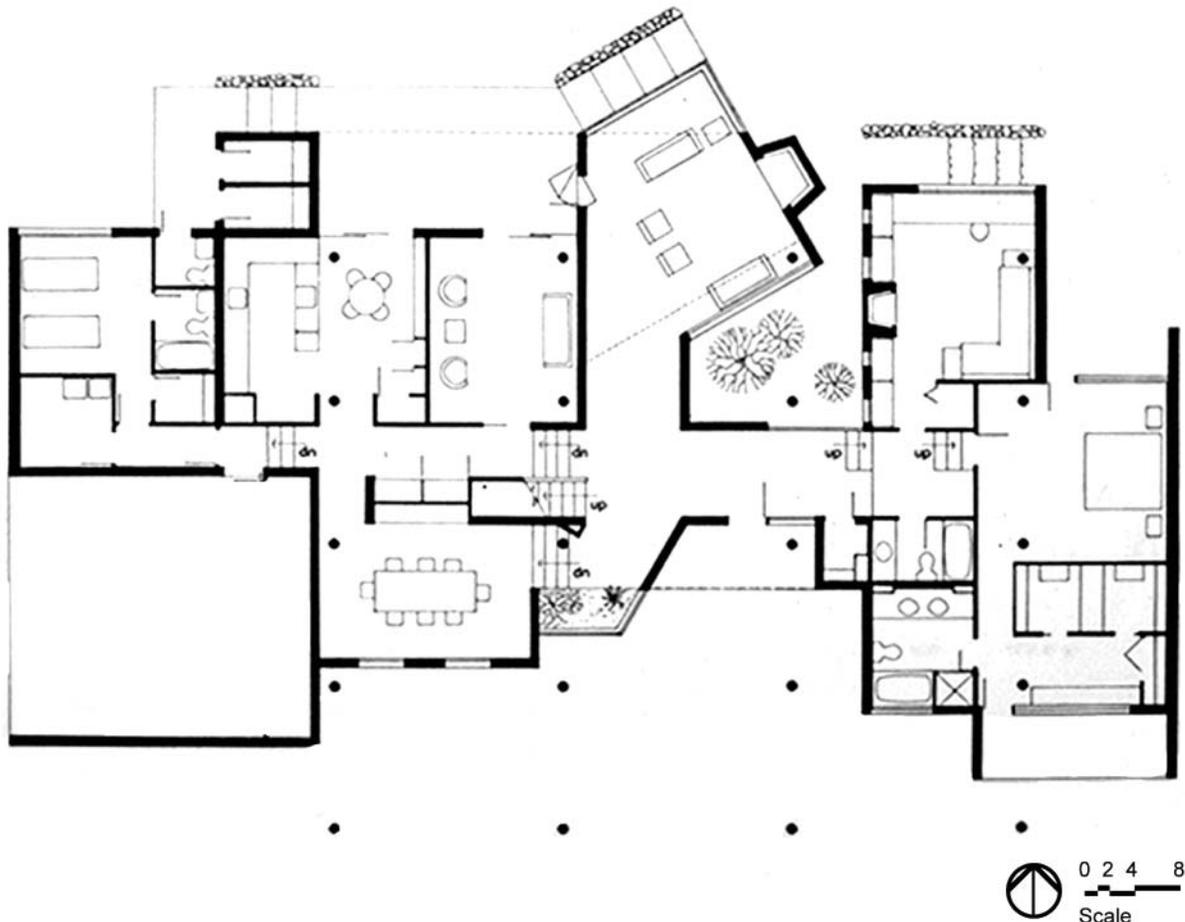
*Fig. 16.6 – St. Philip's in the Hills Episcopal Church and Plaza, 1940. Courtesy of the Arizona Architectural Archives, CALA, University of Arizona.*

in Catalina Foothills Estates that rejected the romanticism of Joesler's earlier residences. One of the most prominent of these homes is the Ramada House designed by Judith Chafee in 1975 (figs. 16.7 and 16.8) The 3,800 sq. ft. residence has quickly become iconic of critical regionalism, a design philosophy that combines the tenets of modernism with the wisdom of



*Fig. 16.7 – Exterior, Ramada House. Courtesy of Glen Allison*

*Fig. 16.8 – Plan, Ramada House. Courtesy of Andrew Gorski after plan published in Architectural Record (February 1979)*



vernacular architecture. Chafee applied this philosophy to Tucson's desert landscape, which she referred to as the "region of the mindful heart". The Modernist-inspired floor plan, combining the formal grid of the ramada's support posts with the more fluid, earth-hugging masonry walls of the house below it, is oriented east-west on three levels, following the slope of the site. The posts pierce the house, providing a continuous internal reference to the structure outside. A direct reference to the traditional O'odham shade structure, the ramada is constructed of round vertical poles and closely-spaced 2' x 4' timbers form the horizontal lattice. It is positioned to filter the light falling on the southern entry facade and responds to seasonal changes in the position of the sun, providing protection from the high summer sun and welcoming in the rays of the low winter sun. As in its traditional use, the elevated shade structure of the ramada also creates a channel of air below, and in this case between it and the building, through which air is drawn by the natural foothill breezes. The power of the ramada as the dominant design feature of the house is its direct response to the climate as well as the vernacular traditions of the region.

(this text was largely excerpted from R. Brooks Jeffery, et al., *Joelster & Murphey: An Architectural Legacy for Tucson* [Tucson: City of Tucson Planning Department, 1994] and Anne M. Nequette and R. Brooks Jeffery, *A Guide to Tucson Architecture* [Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 2002])

## Winterhaven

Begun in 1949, this post-World War II subdivision is distinguished by broad, curving principal streets, landscaping mostly of grass lawns, deep setbacks, and a unified architectural expression of the ranch house typology (fig. 16.9). Although designed by civil engineer Tony Blanton, the character and image of Winterhaven was dictated by its developer, C.B. Richards, a native of Ohio.

Richards wanted the new neighborhood to be designed along the lines of those in the Midwest, convinced that this kind of design would endow the residents of the neighborhood with what he felt were the wholesome values of middle-class Midwesterners. He was especially inspired by the planned community of Shaker Heights near Cleveland.

To fulfill his goals and to foster a sense of community among residents, Richards established the Winterhaven Water and Development Company, a water district cooperative with three private wells that still operates independently of the City of Tucson, as well as deed restrictions that promoted grass lawns and mature evergreen trees, creating an oasis of "otherness" in the Tucson desert. In addition to ensuring the integration of landscape features as part of the overall character of the development, Richards borrowed other features from successful earlier subdivisions, including curvilinear streets, irregularly shaped lots, and an architectural review process, in this case administered by neighborhood residents.

Visually, Winterhaven's ranch houses suggest a single period of construction, as determined by the relatively short period of subdivision build-out (the eight years between 1949 and 1957) and by an architectural consistency of ranch house styles due to the neighborhood's review process.

### The Ranch House in Winterhaven

The modern ranch-style house is an icon of middle-class suburban life and became the dominant housing type after World War II. Its initial development is credited primarily to California architect Cliff May (1908-1989). May rejected the direction in which modern architecture was heading and decided to design homes based upon a romanticized vision of nineteenth-century California ranches. He was drawn to this style of architecture because he felt that it promoted familial closeness. Ranch homes designed by May

are characterized by a low, horizontal, and rambling form and the use of natural materials that he felt integrated the home into the land, providing in addition a connection between the indoors and outdoors, which he saw as a hallmark of the western lifestyle.

Many ranch homes were constructed with housing loans insured by the Federal Housing Administration (FHA). The FHA dictated that builders follow prescribed guidelines that were meant to ensure quality construction. These guidelines also shaped the basic form of the home and encouraged highly efficient, standardized designs. The style of home that best fit the FHA's standards was May's modern ranch-style house. Unfortunately, the adoption of Cliff May's ranch home by the FHA and its widespread emulation

by other builders, meant that ranch-style homes built during the post-war housing boom soon lost many of May's skillful refinements. The standard ranch home configuration continued to be long, horizontal, and rambling and was easily accommodated by large lots in suburban neighborhoods. The large lots associated with sprawling suburbanization were made attractive because of easy access by automobile. The intimate connection between the ranch house and the automobile is expressed in the prominent inclusion of integrated carports, or garages, on the front facades of many homes.

In Winterhaven, the ranch-style homes are strikingly consistent in their general characteristics. They are typically one-story, with horizontal massing facing the street, and feature asymmetri-

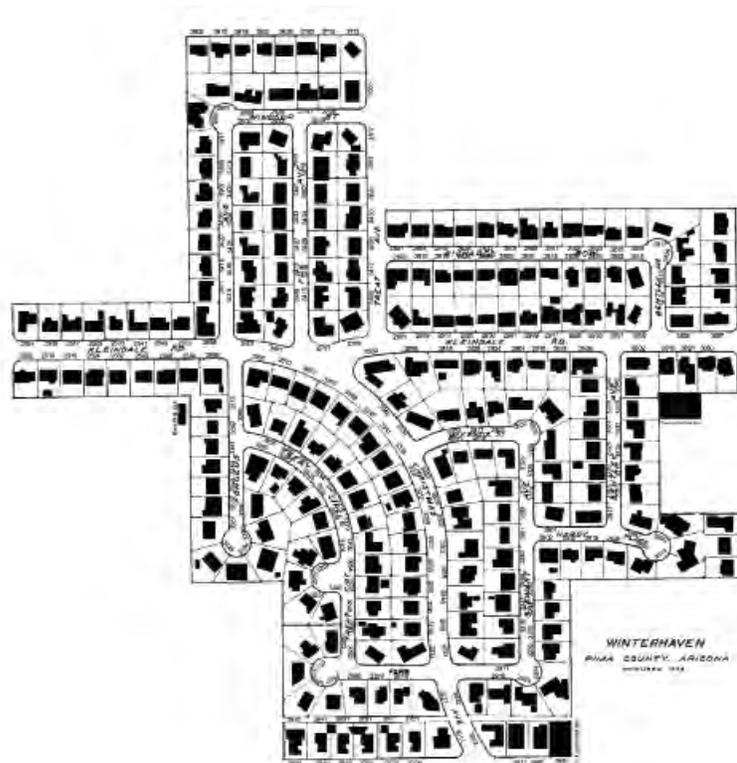
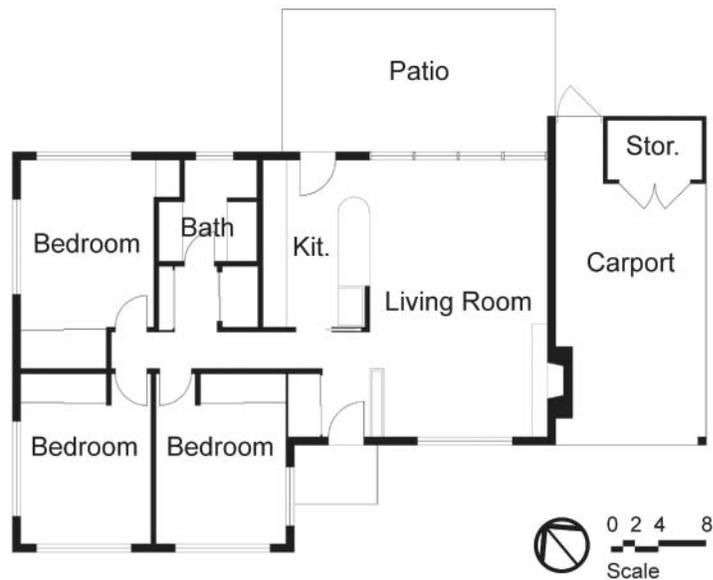


Fig. 16.9 - Winterhaven Subdivision Plan. Courtesy of Ray Brice, Winterhaven Neighborhood Association.

cal facades with gable roofs (fig. 16.10 and 16.11). The typical Winterhaven ranch house has a deep front yard that contributes to the neighborhood streetscape and is complemented by a private walled backyard with a covered patio directly adjacent to the house and accessible from the living or family rooms. The detached houses are each placed on the center of the lot with attached or integrated carports (there were originally no garages in Winterhaven), often with ventilated, or open, side panels. The plan is either rectangular or L-shaped, enveloping a front entry porch, with distinct public (living, dining, and family room) and private (bedroom) zones. With little

exception, the Winterhaven homes all have three bedrooms with either one or two baths. Typical of the ranch house type, the kitchen often opens up to the dining room space with a high counter in lieu of a solid partition wall. Almost all the homes comprise exposed brick construction, with a few incorporating burnt adobe (a material specific to Tucson) laid on a concrete slab at grade. Most of the ranch houses have large picture windows facing the street, as well as metal casement windows, and wide entry porches that are typically integrated within the roof form.



*Fig. 16.10 – Plan, typical Ranch house type, Winterhaven. Courtesy of the Arizona Architectural Archives, CALA, University of Arizona*

*Fig. 16.11 – Exterior, typical Ranch house type, Winterhaven. R. Brooks Jeffery*

Variations on the traditional Ranch House typology in Winterhaven include the Modern Ranch, which is distinguished by corner, floor-to-ceiling, or ribbon windows, and the Transverse Ranch, which is distinguished by having its narrow side (gable end) facing the street (fig. 16.12). The Transverse Ranch house type features an

attached carport along one side of the home under an integrated, low-pitched, roof form (fig. 16.13). Curiously, the entry does not face the street, but opens into either the carport (as in the Wilson Residence) or a low-walled side patio on the opposite side of the house from the carport. The dominant sloping roof form is often exposed



*Fig. 16.12 – Plan, Wilson Residence, Winterhaven. Courtesy of the Arizona Architectural Archives, CALA, University of Arizona*

*Fig. 16.15 – Exterior, Wilson Residence, Winterhaven, representing a variation on the ranch house type, the “transverse ranch”, where the gable side faces the street but the carport is still incorporated within the roof form. R. Brooks Jeffery*

on the interior and is carried throughout the Transverse Ranch house, as can be seen in the Wilson Residence, with a finished cedar plank ceiling and interior partition walls that do not extend all the way to it. The use of high windows adjacent to the ceiling also permits views of the extension of the roof to the exterior, embodying the modern ideal of transparency between interior and exterior, which may also be perceived in the spatial continuity between adjacent interior rooms achieved by means of floating vertical, horizontal, or, as in this case, sloping planes.

A notable expression of Winterhaven's strong sense of community is the annual Festival of Lights, a Christmas light display of individual homes and trees that dates back to the neighborhood's founding in 1949 and today attracts large crowds of people.

(text largely excerpted from National Register of Historic Places Nomination for Winterhaven Historic District, draft copy [Phoenix: Arizona State Parks, 2004])

## Catalina Vista

Like Winterhaven, the Catalina Vista subdivision integrated curvilinear street patterns into the established grid pattern of Tucson's suburban development (fig. 16.14). Catalina Vista also developed during the heyday of the ranch house type with wide lots, broad-facing street facades, and carports displaying the family automobile, all integrated into a suburban streetscape. In addition, Catalina Vista employed City Beautiful suburban amenities such as small neighborhood parks, traffic roundabouts, and landscape medians as boulevard dividers and screens hiding arterial street traffic. With the exception of the central neighborhood park lawn, landscaping as a contributing streetscape element was restricted to a desert palette of palm trees, cactus, and gravel.

Catalina Vista was formerly a 19th-century homestead comprising a quarter section of land and later a gentleman's ranch, Rancho Santa Catalina. In 1940, the Hardy & Stonecypher Real Estate Company purchased the property

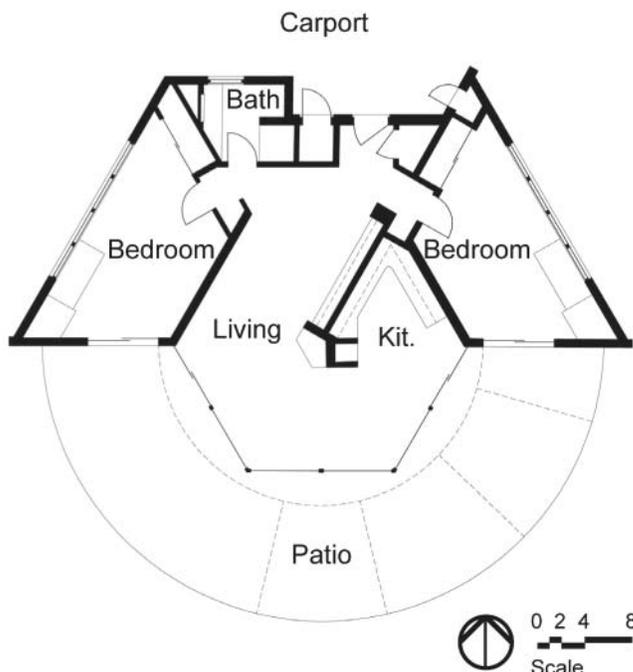


*Fig. 16.14 – Catalina Vista subdivision plan. Courtesy of Don Ryden and Associates*

for development and gave it a name derived from that of the original ranch. During this period of time, Tucson's growth had caught up with this previously remote site outside the city limits, making it a viable property for platting as a residential subdivision. World War II slowed, but did not stop, construction; however, the majority of home sites were developed between 1946 and 1962, reflecting a significant shift in preferred architectural styles for homes in Tucson. In contrast to practices at the other subdivisions highlighted in this tour, Catalina Vista's architectural character was not governed by a review process. Thus, houses in Catalina Vista represent a variety of architectural styles from Period Revival to the more popular Ranch House and even combinations of the two.

Catalina Vista is also home to a set of houses by pioneer Tucson modernist architect, Arthur Brown, who rejected revival styles and challenged himself to design "without style". Brown is credited as Tucson's first "solar architect," consciously attempting to integrate passive solar

elements into his work. The Ball/Paylore House, designed in 1952, is typical of his response to climate, as well as to the needs of his clients. Phyllis Ball and Patricia Paylore were both librarians at the University of Arizona and they found the typical house for the average American family unsuitable for two independent adults who want to share a home. Moreover, they were intent on "avoiding the trite, conventional and the dull" that they found in most of the homes that were being built in the early 1950s. The plan resembles a winged bird (fig. 16.15). The core of the house—living room, kitchen, dining room, and library—is contained within a hexagonal plan with a brick fireplace at the center supporting wooden beams that radiate out to the exterior walls. The bedrooms are placed to either side of the core, like wings, with the north-facing entry inconspicuously accessed through a carport. The southern three faces of the hexagon open up via glass walls to a patio beyond, which has movable corrugated aluminum shade screens on a track at the outer edge of the patio slab (fig 16.16). These



*Fig. 16.15 – Ball/Paylore House plan. Mike Lovato after plan published in *House Beautiful* (October 1962).*

*Fig. 16.16 – Ball/Paylore House, revolving sky-shade being demonstrated by Phyllis Ball, original owner in 1955. Courtesy of Gordon Brown*

lightweight “sky shades” were invented by Brown using conventional hardware to allow the occupants to control the daily and seasonal solar gain in the house and they are still functioning today.

(text largely excerpted from National Register of Historic Places Nomination for Catalina Vista Historic District [Phoenix: Arizona State Parks, 2003] and Nequette and Jeffery, *A Guide to Tucson Architecture*)



---

# GLOSSARY OF TERMS

Note: those terms of Spanish origin which have passed into common parlance in English have not been italicized below.

*acequia* (Spanish, from Arabic): a water channel or ditch used to divert water from rivers and arroyos for daily use and irrigation

adobe (Spanish, from Arabic): most commonly used to refer to large, molded, and sun-dried blocks of clayey mud and water, sometimes also incorporating a binder such as manure or straw; also used for the mud mixture itself when used as mortar or for building walls, as in puddled adobe, which is set in “puddles” and left to dry, eventually building up to form a wall—in contrast to adobe masonry which uses blocks set in mortar and is often covered by a mud plaster made water resistant through the addition of caliche, a naturally occurring calcium deposit found in local soil, or lime

*adobe quemado* (Spanish): burnt adobe

*ak chin* farming: farming made possible by the diversion of water from canyon mouths onto cultivated fields

*arroyo* (Spanish): a desert wash, dry except after rainfall, when it can become a torrential river

*atrio* (Spanish): a walled forecourt before a church

*cabecera* (Spanish): a primary mission complex

*campanario* (Spanish): a church belfry

*canal(es)* (Spanish): a rolled-tin pipe or channel used to drain water from adobe roofs in Sonoran structures; it projects through the parapet of the roof and often has a flared opening with ornamental pieces perpendicular to the opening

*convento* (Spanish): a residence for clergy serving a mission church

hacienda (Spanish): a large estate; also the main dwelling of such an estate

*latilla(s)* (Spanish): slender wooden poles or twigs, such as saguaro ribs or ocotillo branches, placed across vigas and upon which an earthen roof is applied in traditional Sonoran construction

*portal(es)* (Spanish): a doorway, gate, entrance hall, or colonnaded passageway

presidio (Spanish): a walled garrison containing living quarters and various types of buildings

pueblo (Spanish): a settlement, town, or people; may refer to both traditional Native American communities and Spanish Colonial new towns

ramada (Spanish): a post-and-beam shade structure open on all four sides and covered with lightweight brush and sometimes mud

---

*retablo* (Spanish): a decorative structure of wood or plaster behind or above an altar in Spanish Colonial churches whose purpose was to form a frame for holy statues and paintings of religious figures; often elaborately painted in rich colors and gold leaf

*sala* (Spanish): the living room or parlor; in Sonoran row houses, it is the basic multi-purpose unit of interior space

*savina*(*s*) (Spanish): see latilla.

*viga*(*s*) (Spanish): round or rectangular wooden beams used to support a flat roof; sometimes projecting beyond the supporting walls and thus exposed on the exterior

*visita* (Spanish): a secondary mission complex; similar to a mission but without a resident priest

*zaguán* (Spanish, from Arabic): a covered entrance hall leading from the street into a courtyard; eventually such halls were enclosed, creating a spacious semi-public room from which other rooms were entered

(most of this information was excerpted from the list of terms in Anne M. Nequette and R. Brooks Jeffery, *A Guide to Tucson Architecture* [Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 2002])

---

# RECOMMENDED READING LIST

Compiled by Tania Messina

## Non-fiction

Abbey, Edward. *Beyond the Wall: Essays From the Outside*. New York: Henry Holt, 1984.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Desert Solitaire: A Season In the Wild*. New York: Ballantine Books, 1990.

Alcock, John. *Sonoran Desert Spring*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1998.

Bahr, Donald and Julian Hayden. *The Short Swift Time of Gods On Earth*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1994.

Bailey, Lynn R. *"Too Tough to Die"—The Rise, Fall and Resurrection of a Silver Camp; 1878 to 1990*. Tucson: Westernlore Press, 2004.

Banham, Reyner. *Scenes In America Deserta*. Salt Lake City: Gibbs M. Smith, 1982; Cambridge: MIT Press, 1989.

Bowden, Charles. *Blue Desert*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1988.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Killing the Hidden Waters*. Austin: University of Texas Press, c1977, 2003.

Childs, Craig. *The Secret Knowledge of Water: Discovering the Essence of the American Desert*. Seattle: Sasquatch Books, 2000.

Dobyns, Henry F. *Spanish Colonial Tucson: A Demographic History*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1976.

Fontana, Bernard. *Biography of a Desert Church: The Story of Mission San Xavier del Bac. Tucson: The Smoke Signal*, published by the Tucson Corral of the Westerners, 1996.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Of Earth and Little Rain*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1989.

Francaviglia, Richard V. *Hard Places. Reading the Landscape of America's Historic Mining Districts*. Iowa City: University of Iowa Press, 1991.

Griffith, James S. *Beliefs and Holy Places: A Spiritual Geography of the Pimería Alta*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1992.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Hecho a Mano: The Traditional Arts of Tucson's Mexican-American Community*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 2000.

\_\_\_\_\_. *A Shared Space: Folklife in the Arizona-Sonora Borderlands*. Logan: Utah State University Press, 1995.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Southern Arizona Folk Arts*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1988.

Hayes, Alden. *A Portal to Paradise*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1999.

- 
- Martin, Patricia Preciado. *Beloved Land: An Oral History of Mexican Americans in Southern Arizona*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 2004.
- McCarty, Kieran. *Desert Documentary: The Spanish Years, 1767 – 1821*. Tucson: Arizona Historical Society, 1976.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *A Frontier Documentary: Sonora and Tucson, 1821 – 1848*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1997.
- Nabhan, Gary Paul. *The Desert Smells Like Rain: A Naturalist in Papago Indian Country*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, c1982, 2002.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Gathering the Desert*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1987.
- Nequette, Anne M. and R. Brooks Jeffery. *A Guide to Tucson Architecture*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 2002.
- O'Connor, Sandra Day and H. Alan Day. *Lazy B: Growing Up on a Cattle Ranch in the American Southwest*. New York: Random House, 2002.
- Officer, James E. *Hispanic Arizona, 1536 – 1856*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1987.
- \_\_\_\_\_. et al. *The Pimería Alta*. Tucson: The Southwestern Mission Research Center, 1996.
- Polzer, Charles W. *Tucson: A Short History*. Tucson: Southwestern Mission Research Center, 1986.
- Reid, Jefferson and Stephanie Whittlesey. *The Archaeology of Ancient Arizona*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1997.
- Robinson, Cecil. *No Short Journeys: The Interplay of Cultures in the History and Literature of the Borderlands*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1992.
- Schultheis, Rob. *The Hidden West: Journeys in the American Outback*. San Francisco: North Point Press, 1983.
- Schwantes, Carlos A. *Bisbee—Urban Outpost on the Frontier*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1992.
- Sheridan, Thomas E. *Los Tucsonenses: The Mexican Community in Tucson, 1854-1941*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1986.
- Sonnichsen, C.L. *Tucson: The Life and Times of an American City*. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1987.
- Stewart, Janet Ann. *Arizona Ranch Houses: Southern Territorial Styles, 1867-1900*. Tucson: Arizona Historical Society/University of Arizona Press, 1974; 1987.
- Van Dyke, John C. *The Desert*. Salt Lake City: Peregrine Smith, 1987.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *The Open Spaces: Incidents of Nights and Days under the Blue Sky*. Salt Lake City: University of Utah Press, 1991.
- Wilbur-Cruce, Eva Antonia. *A Beautiful Cruel Country*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1987.
- Zwinger, Ann Haymond. *The Mysterious Lands*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1996.
- ## Fiction
- Baylor, Byrd. *Yes Is Better Than No*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1977.
- Hayes, J.M. *The Grey Pilgrim*. Phoenix: Poisoned Pen Press, 2000.
- Lowell, Susan. *Ganado Red*. Minnesota: Milkweed Editions, 1988.
- McCarthy, Cormac. *The Crossing*. New York: Vintage, 1995.
- Veá, Alfredo Jr. *La Maravilla*. New York: Plume 1994.
-

---

## NOTES ON CONTRIBUTORS

**James E. Ayres** is a historical archaeologist and historian currently serving as an Adjunct Lecturer in the Department of Anthropology at the University of Arizona, and as President of the Arizona Archaeological and Historical Society. He is a member of the Editorial Advisory Committee of the journal *Historical Archaeology*, is an Advisor Emeritus of the National Trust for Historic Preservation, and is listed on the Register of Professional Archaeologists. He is also a former President and member of the Board of Directors of the Society for Historical Archaeology, former Chairman of the Tucson-Pima County Historical Commission, a former member of the Board of Directors of the Arizona Historical Society, and a former State Historic Preservation Officer of Arizona.

**Paul R. Fish** is a Professor in the Department of Anthropology at the University of Arizona and Curator of Archaeology at the Arizona State Museum. His areas of archaeological specialization include prehispanic settlement patterns and political and social organization in lowland South America as well as in the arid United States Southwest and northwest Mexico. His current research examines the cyclical emergence of complex leadership strategies in middle range societies, among both the intensive agricultural

societies of the Sonoran Desert and early fishermen along the southern coast of Brazil.

**Catherine Gilman** has been a Mapping Specialist with Desert Archaeology, Inc. for fourteen years. She has moved steadily away from field work and toward air conditioning and now spends her days at computers loaded with Autodesk/ESRI products (CAD/GIS) and their increasingly necessary counterparts, Adobe Acrobat and Photoshop. Her aim in life is to make accurate and precise geo-referenced material attractive and instructive as well.

**Andrew Gorski** is a graduate student at the University of Arizona pursuing degrees in Architecture and Landscape Architecture. His recent work includes the development of maintenance guidelines for historic buildings at Petrified Forest National Park in Arizona and the installation of a cistern to harvest rainwater at a residence in Nogales, Mexico. He received a Bachelor's Degree in Environmental Design from Miami University in Oxford, Ohio.

**Simon Herbert** joined Statistical Research, Inc., Tucson, as its Historic Preservation Specialist in June 2004. He is currently working with the team responsible for making repairs to Empire Ranch, a historic property near Sonoita, Arizona that is

---

now owned by the Bureau of Land Management; the team is also overseeing implementation of an adaptive reuse plan for the ranch. Between 1994 and 2000, Mr. Herbert was an Associate Professor in the nationally recognized Building Preservation and Restoration program of Belmont Technical College in Ohio. In 2000, he became the first director of the Arkansas Institute for Building Preservation Trades located at Phillips Community College, University of Arkansas, in Helena, Arkansas. He holds a Master of Science in Historic Preservation from the University of Pennsylvania and a Bachelor of Arts degree in Industrial Design from Ravensbourne College of Art in Kent, England.

**Josephine Antoinette Hilliard** is a longtime resident of the Southwest and is proud to call herself an University of Arizona "Aggie." Her love for ranching and open spaces comes from a family pre-Revolutionary War farm in Pennsylvania and a ranch in Texas. She holds a Master of Arts in Historic Preservation from Goucher College and is an original recipient of a newly established research fellowship from the Arizona Historical Society for her project of chronicling, through photography, the disappearing vernacular architecture of Arizona cattle and sheep ranches.

**Laura H. Hollengreen** is not an expert in the architecture of the Southwest but an eager collaborator with those of her colleagues who are. She was trained as a medievalist art historian with degrees from Princeton University (A.B.) and the University of California (M.A., Ph.D.). She has taught at the University of Arizona for eight years, first as a part-time Adjunct Lecturer in the School of Architecture and the School of Art and, since Fall 2000, as an Assistant Professor of History and Theory in the School of Architecture. Her publications to date deal with a diverse array of subjects: architectural representation, the urbanism of French Gothic cathedral towns, the pedagogy of architectural thesis work,

and manuscript representations of violence in the context of medieval anti-Semitism.

**Melissa J. Huber** is a Conservation Assistant in the Preservation Division of the Arizona State Museum. She received her B.A. in Art History from Arizona State University and is currently a student of Preservation Studies at the University of Arizona. Born and raised in the Arizona desert, she is particularly interested in issues pertaining to arid climates, earthen and vernacular architecture, and the adaptive reuse of historic structures.

**R. Brooks Jeffery** is Coordinator of Preservation Studies at the University of Arizona where he teaches in the College of Architecture and Landscape Architecture. Jeffery has spent his career documenting, interpreting, and publicizing the significance of built environments throughout the world, including the Middle East, Spain, Latin America, and the U.S. Southwest. His publications include "From Azulejos to Zaguanes: The Islamic Legacy in the Built Environment of Hispano-America," *Journal of the Southwest* (2003); *A Guide to Tucson Architecture* (2002), co-authored with Anne M. Nequette; *Joeler & Murphey: An Architectural Legacy for Tucson* (1994); and *Yemen: A Culture of Builders* (1989). In addition to his teaching and research, Jeffery serves as a member of the University of Arizona Historic Preservation Advisory Committee, Tucson Community Design Academy, Arizona Historic Sites Review Committee, and the Vernacular Architecture Forum.

**Michael Lovato** is a graduate student at the University of Arizona studying architecture and preservation. He received a Bachelor's of Science in Architecture from the University of Michigan in 2003. During the summer following his graduation, he was involved with the Heidelberg Project, a neighborhood-wide art installation in inner-city Detroit focusing on community awareness. He is presently working with fellow stu-

---

dent Andrew Gorski on developing historically sympathetic maintenance guidelines for Petrified Forest National Park in Arizona. In 2004 he was a student ambassador to the Vernacular Architecture Forum conference in Harrisburg, Pennsylvania.

**John Messina** holds a Master of Architecture degree from MIT, and is a research architect with the Southwest Center and the School of Architecture of the University of Arizona. He teaches a course on the Sonoran Desert region, as well as a design studio on the adaptive reuse of existing structures. His research is centered on the architecture and urbanism of the Greater Southwest, including northwest Mexico. His current investigations are focused on the silver mining town of Alamos, Sonora, as well as on issues of contemporary architectural production in arid zones. In addition to his academic affiliations, he maintains an architectural practice in Tucson, Arizona, concentrating on projects at a neighborhood scale that allow for experimentation with construction materials and tectonic assembly.

**Tania Messina** earned a degree in English from Louisiana State University and is now a freelance writer. For ten years she owned Coyote's Voice Books, a Tucson bookstore specializing in literature and architecture.

Anne M. Nequette is a full-time Lecturer in the School of Architecture at the University of Arizona, teaching History/Theory and Design Studio courses. She practiced architecture for ten years in Tucson following the completion of her M.Arch. degree from Princeton University in 1986. Her book *A Guide to Tucson Architecture* (2002), co-authored with R. Brooks Jeffery, is a comprehensive guide to buildings and spaces in Tucson, with examples from the earliest pit structure to work completed in 2000. Her current research centers on a comparative study of sustainable architectural practices for hot/arid

climates, using case studies from the American Southwest, Australia, and Spain.

**Janet H. Parkhurst** is an Arizona-registered architect and president of Janet H. Strittmatter Inc., a firm specializing in historic preservation. Ms. Parkhurst obtained her Bachelor and Master of Architecture degrees from the College of Architecture, University of Arizona. Her 1998 master's thesis, entitled "Arizona's Vernacular Dwellings," provided an illustrated compendium of historic Native American, Hispanic, and Euro-American dwelling types and now serves as a context study for the State Historic Preservation Office in Phoenix. For the first ten years of her practice, she was secretary of Johns & Strittmatter Inc., a design/build firm specializing in new construction and development projects as well as historic preservation. At present, she works in association with Ralph Comey Architects as a preservation consultant for archaeologists whose clients are government agencies and private parties. Her current projects include HABS documentation, National Register Nominations, and historic building condition assessments.

Ron Phares is a professional writer and novelist living in Tucson. Native to the state, he has from day one been influenced by the geographical and cultural power of this place. Currently, he works as a Managing Editor with Access Communications, publisher of Today, the newspaper of the Greater Phoenix Chamber of Commerce, and of AZ Tourist News.

**Harris Sobin** is an architect and educator engaged in the architectural history of the U.S. Southwest and the history of the Modern Movement. While Professor of Architecture at the University of Arizona (1970-2000), he co-directed a study of Tucson's Barrio Historico (1971) and taught electives including "The Architecture of the Arid Region" and "The Art and Architecture of Le Corbusier". Professor Sobin directed historic dis-

---

trict surveys in Florence, Arizona (1973-77) and Mesa, Arizona (1996-98), and co-directed the historic residential district survey of Old Bisbee, Arizona (2002). He prepared National Register Nominations for the Old Bisbee residential district (2004) and Florence Townsite (1982), and was historic rehabilitation architect for projects in Florence (Gila Chapel), Bisbee (St. Patrick's Church), and Vacluse, France (an 1850 magnanerie).

**Matthew Sterner** is a senior project director working for Statistical Research, Inc., a for-profit cultural resources management firm with offices in Tucson, Arizona; Redlands, California; and Burnaby, British Columbia. Mr. Sterner has spent more than twenty years as an archaeologist and historian, most recently specializing in the field of historical archaeology. With over seventy-five publications, he is well versed in the unique and diverse history of southern Arizona.

# INDEX

---

## A

Acequias, 32, 36  
Adobe and adobe construction, 20-21, 29-33, 36-37, 40, 43, 45, 47-48, 50-53, 59, 62-67, 79, 95, 99-101, 103, 119-120, 122-123, 127-128, 131, 133, 135-139, 141, 143-147, 154, 157, 164-166, 176, 180-181, 184, 187-188, 190-192, 194, 196, 198, 203-204, 206, 209-210, 216, 223, 225-226, 236, 240, 246, 250  
Earth construction, 101  
Earthen blocks, 101  
Earthen or earth roof, 45, 143, 216, 246  
Earth walls, 210, 215  
Puddled, 20-23, 29, 53, 100, 246  
Puddled-earth, 19  
Rammed, 95, 100-101, 207, 210, 215  
Ajo, 73-77, 83, 158-159, 171  
Alamos, Sonora, 37-38, 252  
Allen Building, Bisbee 170  
Allen Street, Tombstone 78-79, 154-155  
Apache Powder District, Benson 152  
Arid Regions and Climate  
Arid climate, 59  
Aridity of the desert, 100  
Arid Land, 29  
Arid landscape, 5  
Arid Regions, 3  
Arid United States Southwest, 250  
Arid Zones, 102, 252  
Desert environment, 3, 5, 7, 9, 23, 95  
Hot Arid Zones, 102  
Arizona Street, Warren, 159  
Arthur Douglas House, 82

## B

Babocomari Ranch, 56, 60, 62  
Ball courts, 226  
Ball/Paylore House, Tucson, 98, 243  
Bellota Ranch, 62  
Benson, 73, 149-153  
Binghampton, Tucson, 234-235  
Bisbee, 9, 50, 73-75, 79-84, 149-150, 154, 159-171, 249, 253  
Bisbee Mining & Historical Museum, 169  
Bisbee Stock Exchange, 171  
Bisbee Women's Club, 168  
Box Construction, 165-166  
Brick and brick construction  
Brick(s), 29, 33, 47, 50-51, 65-66, 79, 100, 110, 131, 154, 157, 160, 165, 167, 169-171, 174, 181, 187-188, 196, 200, 210, 240, 243  
Brick construction, 240  
Brick Row Houses, Tucson, 51, 210  
Brittain Residence, Tucson, 208-209  
Brown, Arthur 95-96, 98, 243  
Bungalow(s), 82, 152, 164, 167  
Burns & Wald-Hopkins Architects, 188-189

## C

Cabecera, 32, 128, 246  
Cactus (as building material)  
Cactus rib lathing, 101  
Cactus ribs, 29-30, 198  
Ocotillo, 233  
Prickly pear, 233  
Saguaro rib, 196  
Cady Hall/Patagonia Public Library, Patagonia, 133-135  
Comello, Joe, 187  
Canals, 17  
Carrillo/Sloan Residence, Tucson, 186-187  
Casa Cordova, Tucson, 196-197  
Catalina Foothills Estates, Tucson, 90, 92, 229, 232, 235-237  
Catalina Vista, Tucson, 232, 242-244  
Chafee, Judith, 95, 97, 237  
Charles O. Brown House, Tucson, 47  
Cienega Ranch, 60  
City Beautiful, 75, 77, 81-82, 84, 158-159, 171, 229, 231, 242  
City Beautiful Movement, 75, 158-159, 229, 231  
Civilian Conservation Corps (CCC), 53, 131, 223  
Cochise County Courthouse, Bisbee, 168-169  
Colonia Solana, Tucson, 90, 231-233  
Company towns, 158  
Convent Avenue Studios, Tucson, 101, 210-213, 215  
Convento, Tucson, 5, 30-33, 51, 110, 127, 131, 246  
Copper Queen Hotel, Bisbee, 170  
Copper Queen Library & Post Office, Bisbee, 170  
Copper Queen Mining Company, 9, 79-80, 168-170  
Corbett House, Tucson, 173, 200  
Courtyard, 18, 30, 48, 53, 64-65, 99, 176, 178-179, 188, 191-192, 194, 196, 198, 200, 204, 207, 209-210, 215-216, 226, 247  
Courtyard space(s), 65, 99, 194, 210  
Crow Residence, Tucson, 206  
Cushing Street Bar, Tucson, 209

## D

Double Roofed House, Benson, 151  
Duquesne House Bed & Breakfast, Patagonia, 139

## E

El Encanto Estates, Tucson, 90, 231-234  
El Presidio Bed & Breakfast, Tucson, 50, 180  
El Tiradito, Tucson, 203

## F

Faraway Ranch, 66  
Fencing, 62  
Fish-Stevens-Duffield House, Tucson, 198

# INDEX

---

- Four-square plan, 50, 137,  
Four-square houses, 133, 136, 166, 181, 206  
Frame Construction, 50, 137, 154, 165  
Timbers, 33, 45, 122, 161, 204, 225, 238  
Wood, 50, 61-63, 65, 81, 93, 114, 120, 122-123,  
136-139, 144-145, 147, 154, 160-163, 165-167,  
169-170, 174, 176, 182, 184, 188, 194, 196, 198,  
200, 202, 209-210, 216, 247  
Franklin Residence, Tucson, 174
- G
- Gable roof, 50-51, 65, 135, 138-139, 144, 184  
Guevavi, 56, 71
- H
- Hacienda(s), 56, , 61-62, 64, 123, 235, 246  
Hall churches, 30,32-33,127  
Hall-and-parlor, 50  
Hardy Residence/House, Tucson, 99, 101, 204-205  
Herrerias, E. D., 196, 204  
Hermosillo, Sonora 37-39  
Higgins Hill, Bisbee, 161, 163-164, 166-168  
Hipped, 50, 66, 137, 163, 167-168, 178, 182, 188,  
192, 200, 210  
Hip roof, 66, 135, 137  
Hodges Ruin, Tucson, 19, 21, 24  
Hope VI Santa Rosa, Tucson, 98-99, 230  
Hotel Arnold, Benson, 151  
Hurst, Frederick 167-168, 170  
Hybrid Forms, 40, 66
- I
- Integra wall system, 101  
Irrigation, 17, 23, 32, 36, 118, 150, 222, 234, 246
- J
- Jaastad, Henry 210  
Joesler, 235-238, 251  
Joesler, Josias, 235  
Joy, Rick, 95, 100-101, 210-211, 214-215
- K
- Kino, Father Eusebio Francisco, 5, 29-32, 36, 40,  
55-56, 68, 115, 127
- L
- L-shaped plan, 176, 196  
L-house, 164  
L-shape, 167  
L-shaped, 50, 135, 139, 163, 167-168, 176,  
181, 184, 188, 196, 240  
Laguna Adobe Shed, Patagonia, 138  
Latillas, 61, 101, 196  
Lime and lime plaster  
Lime mortar, 33, 136  
Lime plaster, 53, 110, 135, 209  
Lyric Theatre, Bisbee, 171
- M
- Main Street Commercial Buildings, Bisbee, 170  
Majalca Residence, Patagonia, 137-138  
Mass-plan house, 166  
Massed-plan house, 50  
Means, Eric, 144, 196, 204  
Mellor Residence, Patagonia, 138  
Mesquite Grove Gallery, Patagonia, 139  
Meyer Avenue Project, 207  
Mormons and Mormon Buliding,  
Mormons, 152-153, 234-235  
Mormon Corridor, 235  
Mormon-founded, 149  
Mormonism, 152  
Muchas Casas, 20, 24  
Murphey, John and Helen  
John Murphey, 235  
Helen Murphey, 235  
Murphey(s), 235-236, 238, 251
- N
- Naco Road Buildings, Bisbee, 171  
North Meyer Avenue Rowhouses, Tucson, 184  
Northeast Corner Presidio Wall, Tucson, 191
- O
- Olcott House/Residence, Tucson, 51, 181  
Old Main, Tucson, 9, 51  
Old Town Artisans, Tucson, 194-195
- P
- Pascale Court, Tucson, 216  
Patagonia, 59, 132-139  
Patagonia City Hall, 137  
Patagonia Hotel, 133-135  
Patagonia Public Library, 133-135  
Paulus, Rob, 102  
Phelps Dodge Mercantile Store, Bisbee, 171  
Pit houses/structures, 18-19  
Platform mounds, 21, 226  
Plaza(s), 37-40, 46-48, 50-53, 92, 168-169, 171,  
221-222, 226, 229, 235-236  
Portrero Homestead, 64  
Poster, Corky, 99, 176, 230  
Poster Frost Associates, 99, 118-119, 121-122, 230  
Punta de Agua, 57-58, 68
-

# INDEX

---

- Pyramidal, 50-51, 101, 135-138, 151, 154, 163-164, 166-167, 174, 181-182, 206, 210  
    Pyramidal cottage, 50-51, 137-138, 167, 206  
    Pyramidal types, 164  
    Pyramidal-roofed, 133, 164  
Pythian Castle, 171
- Q
- Quality Hill, Bisbee, 80, 161, 163, 168-169  
Quevavi, 32, 128  
Quijotoa, 72-73
- R
- Railroad(s), 7-9, 38-40, 44, 48-52, 55, 59, 65-66, 73, 83-84, 95, 123, 132-133, 137, 150-151, 178, 180, 203, 206, 209  
    Railroads of Arizona, 83-84  
Railroad Historic District, Benson, 151  
Ramada House, Tucson, 97, 237  
Ramadas, 31, 97  
Rancheria(s), 23, 56, 131  
Rick Joy Studio, 100-101, 211, 214-215
- S
- Sacred Heart Catholic Church, Tombstone, 154, 157  
San Agustín, Tucson, 31-33, 36-37, 45, 173, 204  
San Bernardino Ranch, 56, 60, 66, 68  
San José de Tumacácori, 32, 34, 127-130  
San Rafael Ranch, 59, 65  
    San Rafael, 56  
Savina(s), 30, 247  
Schieffelin Hall, Tombstone, 157  
Second Owl's Club, Tucson, 52, 176  
Shed roofs, 209-210  
Shed, 50, 90, 120, 123, 135, 138-139, 146-147, 166-167, 188, 209-210  
Sierra Bonita Ranch, 58, 60, 62, 64  
Sonora, 3, 7-8, 22, 27, 29, 34, 36-40, 55-56, 60, 66-67, 71-73, 110, 115, 117, 131, 202, 235, 249, 252  
St. David, 149, 152-153  
St. Patrick's Church, Bisbee, 166, 168, 253  
St. Paul's Episcopal Church, Tombstone, 79, 154, 156-157  
St. Philip's in the Hills Episcopal Church, Tucson, 236  
Steinfeld Mansion, Tucson, 52, 176, 179
- T
- T-shaped plan  
    T-house, 164  
    T-shaped, 50, 120  
Tanque Verde Ranch, Tucson, 62  
Telles Block, Tucson, 45, 194-195  
Tombstone, 9, 29, 61, 73-75, 77-79, 81, 83-84, 149, 153-157, 160-163, 169-171  
Tombstone City Hall, 154  
Tombstone Courthouse, 154-155  
Tombstone Engine Company No. 1, 154  
Tombstone Epitaph Office, 156-157  
Train Depot, Patagonia, 137  
Trincheras, 220, 222  
Trost, Henry 52, 159, 170, 176, 179  
Tubac, 32, 34-36, 117, 159  
Tucson, 5-9, 11, 15, 17-24, 27, 29-41, 44-53, 57-59, 64-65, 67-69, 71, 73, 75-81, 83-84, 87-93, 95-103, 111, 115, 117-119, 122, 124, 127, 131, 140, 142, 149-150, 159, 168, 170-171, 173-174, 176, 178, 182, 187, 190-192, 194, 196, 198, 200, 203-204, 210, 215, 219-220, 223, 225, 227, 229-232, 234-236, 238, 240, 242-244, 247-253  
Tumacacori, 32, 34, 127-130
- U
- U-shaped (plan), 64, 122, 200, 204
- V
- Valdez Residence, Tucson, 182-183  
Valencia House, Tucson, 51, 210  
Valenzuela House, Patagonia, 136  
Verdugo Residence, Tucson, 178  
    Verdugo House, 47  
Vigas, 30, 33, 36, 61, 101, 187, 192, 194, 196, 225, 246  
Vint & Associates, 204  
Vint, Robert (Bob) 95, 99, 102-103, 176, 196  
Visita, 32-33, 36-37, 45, 55-56, 128, 173, 247  
Vista Park, 82, 159
- W
- Walter Douglas House, 159  
Warren, 74-75, 79-84, 149, 153, 158-159, 171  
Weiner, Paul, 101, 180  
Wilder Residence, Bisbee Women's Club, 168, 176  
    Wilder House, 99, 101, 177  
Wilson Residence, 241-242  
Winterhaven, 232, 238-242  
Works Progress Administration (WPA), 80, 83-84, 161, 168-169
- Y
- YMCA Building, Bisbee, 170  
YWCA Building, Bisbee, 170
- Z
- Zaguan, 61, 99, 143, 180, 182, 196, 204, 247



[www.vernaculararchitectureforum.org](http://www.vernaculararchitectureforum.org)

Cover photo courtesy of Bill Timmerman